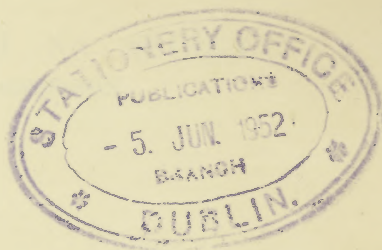


H56



LIBR. EPISCOPALUM
SANCTI PATRICII EPISCOPI

EDWARD MILES

1952

INTRODUCTION BY THE



COIMISIÚN LÁIMHSCRÍBHINNÍ NA hÉIREANN
IRISH MANUSCRIPTS COMMISSION

LIBRI EPISTOLARUM
SANCTI PATRICII EPISCOPI

BY

LUDWIG BIELER

PART I

INTRODUCTION AND TEXT



DUBLIN
STATIONERY OFFICE

1952

To be purchased directly from the
GOVERNMENT PUBLICATIONS SALE OFFICE, G.P.O. ARCADE.
DUBLIN, C.S.

or through any Bookseller.

Price : Twenty-one Shillings.

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

It is a pleasant duty to acknowledge the encouragement and support I have been given from many sides during the preparation of this work.

In the first place my thanks are due to the late Professor Eóin MacNeill, whose fine scholarship, enthusiasm, and human understanding have been for years my guide and companion. May this publication be regarded as a humble tribute to his memory !

Of living scholars I owe a special debt of gratitude to Père Paul Grosjean, S.J., Brussels, who, at the draft stage, spontaneously offered and liberally gave me the benefit of his acute criticism. It is these private communications that are indicated whenever I quote Père Grosjean without reference to published work.

The many other friends and colleagues to whom I am indebted in one way or another will, I am sure, kindly accept this summary acknowledgment.

My labours have been greatly eased by the unfailing co-operation of the authorities and staff of the National Library, the libraries of the Royal Irish Academy, of Trinity College, University College, the Franciscan Library, and Marsh's Library, Dublin. From many libraries in England and abroad I have received valuable information, and photos from rare books and manuscripts, which have been utilized, either directly or indirectly, in the present edition. During 1947-48 the librarians of Notre Dame University, Ind., and of the University of Chicago have put me under a great obligation by granting special facilities for the study of late Latin literature not available in this country.

This work was accepted for publication by the Irish Manuscripts Commission in 1945, but owing to post-war printing conditions, publication had to be indefinitely postponed. I have used this involuntary delay for a thorough revision in the light of manuscript and other material which was inaccessible during the war.

Publication has now been made possible by the great kindness of Professor Franz Blatt, Aarhus, who generously placed at my disposal a large portion of this year's *Classica et Mediaevalia*, and also by the consent of the Irish Manuscripts Commission to hand over my manuscript for the purpose. I wish to express my deep gratitude to both parties for having gone so far to meet me. This first volume contains the introduction and text ; a second will contain the commentary and a general index.

A last word of thanks goes to my wife, who spared neither time nor labour in helping me to see the manuscript through the press. Her assistance has been invaluable, and her cheerful companionship has made a dull job bright.

LUDWIG BIELER

DUBLIN, *Easter*, 1951

LIBRI EPISTOLARUM
SANCTI PATRICII EPISCOPI

INTRODUCTION TEXT AND COMMENTARY

BY

LUDWIG BIELER

CONTENTS

PART I

	Page
Preface	5
Introduction	7
I. The History of the Text:	
1. Description of the Manuscripts	7
2. Classification of the Manuscripts	11
3. The Exemplar ω	22
4. The Indirect Tradition (Ψ)	23
5. The Archetype (Σ)	27
6. The Later History of the Text	29
II. Problems of Textual Criticism:	
1. Principles	31
2. Individual Cases	31
3. Biblical Quotations	34
4. Conclusions	38
III. Plan of the Present Edition:	
1. The Text and Apparatus	39
2. Spelling	40
3. Punctuation	44
Additional Remarks on the <i>Apparatus Biblicus</i>	45
Libri Epistolarum Sancti Patricii Episcopi	56
Confessio	56
Epistola ad Milites Corotici	91
Epistolarum Deperditarum Fragmenta et Testimonia	103
Appendix: A Tentative Reconstruction of Ψ	106
Indices	
1. Index Locorum	113
2. Index Nominum et Rerum	118
3. Index Grammaticus	123

PREFACE

Magonus Sucatus Patricius, generally known as Saint Patrick, the Apostle of Ireland, has so far been almost completely neglected by students of Latin language and literature. The information available in Schanz — Hosius — Krüger¹⁾ is now badly outdated. Thirty years of intensive research have since elapsed, but its results are not easily accessible to the Latinist²⁾. The name of Patricius is still missing in the list of authors read for the Thesaurus. And yet, a fifth century Latin writer, born in Roman Britain, trained for ecclesiastical office in Gaul, labouring and writing as a missionary bishop in Ireland, outside the pale of Roman civilization, should have attracted students of antiquity as an interesting representative of Late Latin, if for no other reason.

About the author little more is known than what he himself tells us. The accepted (though not unchallenged) chronology of his mission in Ireland is that of the Irish annals, which give 432 as the date of his arrival and 461 (alternatively ca. 492) as the date of his death³⁾. If, as has been suggested, Confessio 19 refers to the state of Gaul between 407 and 409⁴⁾, Patrick, then in his twenty-second year, was born ca. 385.

The apostle of the Irish was not a *littérateur*. Whatever he wrote was dictated by the responsibilities of his episcopal office. Most of

¹⁾ IV/2 (1920), 530—533.

²⁾ I have tried to fill the gap as best I could with my book *The Life and Legend of St. Patrick* (Dublin, Clonmore and Reynolds, 1949), which, I hope, will be found to give at least a fair presentation of the *status quæstionis*.

³⁾ The two dates, 461 and ca. 492, are probably the obits of two different persons, see T. F. O'RAHILLY *The two Patricks* (Dublin, Institute for Advanced Studies, 1942), and L. BIELER, *The Mission of Palladius* (TRADITIO 6 [1948] 1—32).

⁴⁾ P. GROSJEAN, AB 54 (1936), 196—9.

his writings in Latin⁵⁾ seem to have been letters; even his *Confessio* is in both style and content an 'open letter,' addressed to the Church in Ireland and Britain and, perhaps, also to the Church in Gaul. Beside these letters we possess a few *Dicta Patricii* and a set of canons; the latter, though doubtless endorsed by Patricius, may have been drafted by somebody else, possibly by one of the joint signataries Auxilius and Iserninus; they have therefore not been included in the present edition.

A collection of Patrick's letters existed at least as early as the seventh century; its title seems to have been *Libri epistolarum sancti Patricii episcopi*⁶⁾. Of this collection two pieces have survived intact, the 'Confession,' written at a time when Patrick was advanced in years (Conf. 62), and the letter to the soldiers of the British prince Coroticus, which is almost certainly of earlier date⁷⁾. Several other letters are known either from scanty fragments or from references.

The present edition of the *Libri Epistolarum* is based not only on a *recensio codicum*, but also on the indirect tradition of the *Vitae*. Although it has not been my intention to write a fully documented history of the text, I shall touch its problems so far as is necessary for the purpose of *recensio*.

⁵⁾ We are not concerned here with the Old Irish *Lorica* that goes under Patrick's name.

⁶⁾ See Introduction, p. 28.

⁷⁾ P. GROSJEAN, AB 63 (1945) 100—111.

ABBREVIATIONS

AB	Analecta Bollandiana
ASS.....	Acta Sanctorum
I.E.R.....	Irish Ecclesiastical Record
LA	Liber Ardmachanus (Book of Armagh)
R.I.A.....	Royal Irish Academy
T.C.D.	Trinity College, Dublin
Z.C.P.....	Zeitschrift für celtische Philologie

INTRODUCTION

I. HISTORY OF THE TEXT¹⁾

1. *Description of the Manuscripts*²⁾.

The letters of Patricius are preserved in eight manuscripts of which seven are independent of each other.

1. Dublin, T. C. D. 52 ("Book of Armagh"). Written, at least in part, by Ferdomnach, *scriba* of Armagh, ca. 807. Small Irish minuscule. — Contents: Patriciana (Muirchú, Dicta Patricii, Tírechán and Additamenta, Liber Angueli, Confessio with gaps³⁾; New Testament ("D"); Sulpicius Severus (Vita s. Martini, Dialogi, Epistolae). The Patriciana are undoubtedly in the hand of Ferdomnach. At the end of the Confessio, which covers fol 22r-24v, there is this colophon: *Huc usque uolumen quod Patricius manu conscripsit sua*. — Collated by me from the facsimile edition by E. Gwynn⁴⁾ and checked up with the original in case of doubt. — Symbol: D⁵⁾.

¹⁾ Quotations by page and line from the *Libri Epistolarum* refer to the text of the present edition, which in arrangement follows line by line the edition by NEWPORT J. D. WHITE *Libri Sancti Patricii*, in PROCEEDINGS OF THE ROYAL IRISH ACADEMY 25 C 7 (Dublin 1905). Similar quotations from Muirchú, Tírechán, and other texts in the Book of Armagh refer to WHITLEY STOKES The Tripartite Life of Patrick (Rolls Series, 1887). All quotations by page and column refer to JOHN COLGAN Trias Thaumaturga (Lovanii 1647); quotations by line only, to K. MULCHRONE, Bethu Phátraic, R.I.A., 1939.

²⁾ For more detailed descriptions see NEWPORT WHITE PROC. R.I.A. 25 C 7.11 (pp. 203 ff., 542 ff.); L. BIELER Codices Patriciani Latini (Dublin, Institute for Advanced Studies, 1942), nos 1—8.

³⁾ Cf P. GROSJEAN Analyse du Livre d'Armagh, AB 62 (1944) 33—41.

⁴⁾ Book of Armagh. The Patrician Documents. (Facsimiles in Collotype of Irish Manuscripts. 3. Irish Manuscripts Commission, Dublin 1937).

⁵⁾ NEWPORT WHITE: A. I prefer to use the same *siglum* for the New Testament and the Patrick section.

2. Oxford Rawlinson B 480 (Clarendon 91). Miscellaneous notes and collections of several hands saec. XVII. Fol 79r-81v contain under the heading: *Ex antiquiss^o manuscripto Hib. Incipiunt libri S. Patricii* a text of the Confessio as far as 238, 11 *qui sumus nos epistola Christi*, further a note concerning Palladius (from the Additamenta to Tírechán) and the *Dicta Patricii*. All this has been copied from D⁶), with occasional corrections from Ware's edition and others which appear to be the transcriber's own guesses.
- P 3. Paris, Bibl. Nat. lat. 17626 (Compiègne 40^{bis}). Caroline minuscule saec. X. — A collection of Lives of Saints (all but one commemorated in February or March) arranged in the order of the calendar with slight disturbances. Obviously written for some Benedictine house⁷), but, considering the absence of the *Aduentus ss. martyrum Cornelii et Cypriani* (March 15) hardly for Saint-Corneille, Compiègne, whence the MS was transferred to the Bibliothèque Nationale in 1802⁸). The fact that the collection includes a Life of St. Vodoald (Vodoalus) would make one think rather of the diocese of Soissons. — The MS contains both Confessio and Epistola (fol 72r-85v). — Symbol: P.
- V 4. Arras, Bibl. munic. 450 (S. Vedasti 1628. F. 2. — S. Vedasti 3, 16). A collection of forty-four Lives of Saints, arranged in the order of the ecclesiastical calendar, from Silvester to Peter and Paul, with occasional disturbances. Written in continental minuscule saec. XII⁹), almost certainly in Northern France^{9a}), but not neces-

⁶) Cf fol 79r24 *pgrem* for *scirem* (D 22rβ5—6).

⁷) Cf the heading on fol 85v *Incipiunt capitula de uita uel miracula (sic) uenerabilis Benedicti conditoris et abbatis*.

⁸) See L. DELISLE *Le cabinet des manuscrits* II 264.

⁹) The main collection is followed by an appendix consisting of four hagiographical texts out of their place in the liturgical calendar, the latest being the visions of Elizabeth of Schonau (1152—1164/5). Fol 52rα1-24 is in a slightly later hand, perhaps that of a 'modernizing' scribe; it is narrower, more pointed, and more advanced in the breaking of shafts. I do not know whether the same hand occurs in other sections of the MS. With the exception of the Patriciana, I am dependent for information on the *Catalogue général des manuscrits des bibliothèques de France*, Dép. 4. (1872) 176. A more detailed description of this codex would be very welcome.

^{9a}) Among the saints represented are Fursa, Amandus, Medardus, Remigius; the legend of St. Remigius is placed between those of St. Hilary (Jan. 13) and St. Maur (Jan. 15), in accordance with the ecclesiastical calendar of Northern France, where

sarily at or for Saint-Vaast. — The Confessio and Epistola of St. Patrick are not found under his feastday (March 17)¹⁰; they are inserted after the Life of St. Fursa (January 22), who brought relics of St. Patrick to his foundation Peronna Scottorum¹¹). The Patriciana occupy fol 50v-53r; two leaves are now missing, one between fol 51 and 52, the other between fol 52 and 53. They were still in their places when a copy was taken from this codex by A. Denis S. J. for the Bollandist Daniel Papebroch, who edited v these texts in 1668¹²). However, Papebroch has taken so great liberties with the text that his evidence, except for variants either explicitly acknowledged or confirmed by other witnesses, must be accepted with reserve. — Symbols: V for the original MS (Newport White: B); v for Papebroch's edition (Newport White: Boll).

5. Rouen, Bibl. munic. 1391. (U. 39. — U. 53. — Jumièges G. 9.) R Small continental minuscule saec. XI (in?). — A collection of twenty-seven hagiographical texts in no recognizable order. The MS is mutilated at the end; the text of the Confessio, which is the last item (fol 157^{bis}v-159v), breaks off at 244, 1 *insinuauī amicis-simo meo*. — The codex formerly belonged to the Benedictine abbey of Jumièges, but it is not certain that it was written there. Patrick is the only Irish saint represented in the collection; his Confessio is preceded, though not immediately, by the miracles of St. Gertrud (d. on St. Patrick's Day 659). — Symbol: R.

the feast of St. Remigius fell in the middle of January, not, as elsewhere in the Roman Church, on October 1. — The appendix contains a *Vita s. Godehardi* — probably a life of Godehard, bp. of Hildesheim (d. 1028), who was canonized by Innocent II at the synod of Reims in 1132.

¹⁰) The MS contains no Life of a saint whose feast falls in March.

¹¹) Cf L. GUGAUD *Les saints irlandais hors d'Irlande* (1936), 148.

¹²) ASS Martii 2 (Antwerp 1668), 530 ff. From the heading in ASS it has often been concluded that the editor was Denis. However, as P. GROSJEAN (AB 64, 1948, 284) points out, 1) Denis never belonged to the Bollandists nor did he join in their editorial activities; 2) the words *quam ex vetustissimo . . . codice eruit* imply merely that a copy was taken, or caused to be taken, from the Arras MS by Denis and forwarded to Antwerp; 3) the editor had access to Ussher's *Antiquitates*, which were hardly available at Arras; 4) the draft of an edition of Vita III of St. Patrick in MS Brussels 3196—203, fol 453r-460v, is in the hand of Papebroch; 5) there is some positive evidence to show that the editor of the Patrician texts in ASS was Daniel Papebroch (cf ASS Jul II. 289 E).

- F 6. Oxford, Bodl. Fell 3. Minuscule saec. XII/2¹³). — Thirty-one Lives of Saints, most of whom are commemorated between January and June¹⁴); no clear order. Of local saints, some are distinctly English (Boniface, Wilfrid of York, Cuthbert); Ireland is represented only by St. Patrick's *Confessio* and *Epistola* (fol 7r-13r), which are preceded, as in the Rouen MS, by a text relating to St. Gertrud. — In the middle of the seventeenth century, the MS belonged to Salisbury Cathedral, where it was seen by Sir James Ware. The script is undoubtedly English and resembles certain Salisbury hands¹⁵). For the later history of the MS see Summary Catalogue 1212 f. — Symbol: F (Newport White: F₃).
- C 7. London, Brit. Mus. Cotton Nero E. 1. Written in round minuscule, at Worcester (according to the late Dr. R. Flower, of the British Museum), ca. 1000, with more recent additions at the beginning and end. *Confessio* and *Epistola* are found on fol 169v-174v. — The contents and history of this and the following MS will be discussed in § 2.
- G 8. Oxford, Bodl. Fell 4. Minuscule saec. XII/1 (Ker: XI/2). — Sixty-three Lives of Saints. — *Confessio* and *Epistola* are found on G' fol 158r-166r. A corrector's hand is visible throughout, but his work is of little importance. In most places the original readings are still ascertainable. — Provenance and history of this MS are the same as of Fell 3¹⁶) — Symbol: G (Newport White: F₄); corrections are noted as G'¹⁷).

MSS 3 to 8 have been newly collated by me from the photos made for the late Dr. Newport White, which are now preserved in the Royal Irish Academy and in Marsh's Library, Dublin.

¹³) According to N. R. KER *Mediaeval Libraries of Great Britain* 97: saec. XII in.

¹⁴) Cf Summary Catalogue II/2 (1937), 1211.

¹⁵) For this information I am indebted to Miss Beryl Smalley, late of the Bodleian Library.

¹⁶) See now N. R. KER *Salisbury Cathedral Manuscripts* and Patrick Young's Catalogue, in *WILTSHIRE ARCHAEOLOGICAL AND NATURAL HISTORY MAGAZINE* (1949), 153—83, esp. 160 f. MS Fell 1+4 has even the D. M. markings so characteristic of early Salisbury MSS (p. 154, note 4).

¹⁷) Newport White gives all 'surface readings' of this MS as F₄ and marks original readings that have been corrected as F₄*; I prefer to use one and the same symbol for the original reading in all instances.

2. *Classification of the Manuscripts.*A. The group Φ .

Where there are variants in the text of the *Confessio*, the issue is generally between D on the one hand and PVRFCG on the other¹). Instances are too frequent to need enumeration. This group, for which I introduce the symbol Φ (White's *reliqui*), has a text tradition Φ distinctly different from that of D. Not only is D an Irish manuscript, whereas all the others are either continental or English; they are also manuscripts of different types. D is a collection of certain standard texts of the Church of Armagh; the other six MSS are passionals intended obviously for use in north western Europe. Contrary to D, Φ contained both *Confessio* and *Epistola*²).

Since R breaks off in the middle of *Confessio* 26, I distinguish between Φ (the complete group) and ϕ (the same group less R). ϕ

V, and to a lesser degree R, betray some "editing" on the part of their scribes, especially in the handling of biblical quotations³); the corrector of G was on the whole content with a revision of spelling and grammar.

The class Φ can be subdivided on the basis of group-readings, which, at one point at least, are confirmed by external evidence⁴).

There is, first of all, considerable agreement of (R)FCG against the rest. These four MSS thus form a subgroup, which I label Δ (in the absence of R: δ)⁵). The more important variants are the following: δ

235, 14 *sensum* DPV: *sensus* Δ

237, 1 *fratribus et cognatis meis* DPV: *fratres et cognatos meos* Δ

238, 5 *gestit* DV. *gestat* P: *gessit* Δ

¹) This fact was first realized, however dimly, by A. W. HADDAN *Councils and ecclesiastical documents relating to Great Britain and Ireland* II/2 (1878) 296.

²) The absence of the latter from R is explained by the defective condition of this MS.

³) Cf NEWPORT WHITE 214, 216 ff.

⁴) The lists of group-readings in NEWPORT WHITE 213—6 must be read negatively; White's basis of classification is agreement in primary, not in secondary readings.

⁵) The existence of this group was not quite clearly realized by NEWPORT WHITE. Most of the evidence for it is hidden in his group-readings headed AB (BOLL), p. 213 f., and B (or BOLL) P, p. 545.

- 239,10 *eram* DPV: *etiam* Δ
 241,15 *fuero* DPV: *fuera* Δ
 244,19 (R deest) *impediret* DPV: *impenderet* FC. *impe*diret* G'. (The reading of δ apparently was *impendiret*; F and C have altered independently; in G, the blunder was corrected by the erasure of n)
 245,24 (DR desunt) *auderem adgrederere* P. *auderem aggredi* v: *audirem adgrederer* F. *adire adgreder* C. *adire aggrederer* G. (The reading of PV [Φ?] seems to have been *auderem adgrederere*, that of δ *audire(m) aggrederer*; some further alteration, whether phonetic or semantic we cannot tell, was introduced in the source of CG, obscured again by a blunder in C.)
 246,17 (D deest) *audirem* PV: *aurem (haurirem* G') δ
 248, 9 *esse* DPV: *ipse* δ
 248,28 (D deest) *sapit* PV: *capit* δ
 249,30 (D deest) *insinuavi* PV: *insuavi* δ
 251, 1 (D deest) *cupiebant* PV: *cupiebam* δ
 251, 7 (D deest) *iudicabant* PV: *indicabant* δ
 251,23 *ego uero* DPV: *uero* om δ
 252, 5 (D deest) *scrutator* V. *scrutatur* P: *scrutabor* δ. (*Scrutator* is the imperative of the third person. The rare form seems to have puzzled the scribes; the readings of P and δ are two different attempts at emendation.)
 253, 1 (D deest) *fecerit* PV: *fecerat* δ
 256,12 (D deest) *decurione* Pv: *decorione* δ
 257,12 (D deest) *baptizatos* Pv: *baptizat* δ
 259,12 (D deest) *mereantur* PV: *mererentur (-eantur* G') δ

In all these instances, except 256,12, the reading of Δ (δ) is "secondary" — either openly faulty or intrinsically inferior, or less probable⁶). Only once — at 237,19 *exaliue* DP: *ex saliuē* V: *ex saliuā* Δ — a slight corruption in the archetype was probably corrected by the parent of the group⁷). Contrasted with DPV, the MSS of Δ may be called *deteriores*.

⁶) D, to be sure, is often missing. In the whole *Confessio*, however, there is but one instance of a common mistake in ΔΔ: 243,11. *episcopus* for *spiritus* (so PvG'). The ΔΔ variant can be explained by the misreading of a contraction in the archetype; it should be remembered that two of the witnesses for *spiritus* (vG') are known as correctors.

⁷) In 254,24 (D deest) *seruus est peccati* Pv: *peccati* om δ, the issue is one of biblical criticism.

Within Δ , MSS C and G stand out as twins. Their close kinship Δ_2 is proved by a number of group-readings, e. g.

- 238,24 *rethorici: nethorici* CG
 240, 2 (R deest) *et nihil: ex nihilo* CG
 244, 3 (R deest) *habebam: habeam* CG
 248,12 (DR desunt) *nuntio: nutu* CG
 251,24 (R deest) *spero: sperno* CG
 253,14 (R deest) *secundum: sanctum* CG⁸

More conclusive still is the external evidence⁹). The original portion of C (nos 5-119), continued by MS Cambridge, Corpus Christi College (CCC) 9 (saec. XII, also of Worcester provenance), p. 61 ff., on the one hand, and MSS Bodl. Fell 4 + 1 (the latter mutilated at the end, cf. the contemporary index on fol 184r), on the other, represent, with few exceptions, the same hagiographical compilation. Their affinity is apparent in a number of identical headings (e. g. C 36 = G 30 *Actus Theophili qui Christum negauit et recuperauit*) and in the occasional misplacing or unusual dating of feasts (the latter partly due to clerical errors). Moreover, the current numbers in the index of MS Fell 1, differing (but not equally) from the numbering in the body of Nero E. 1 + CCC 9 and Fell 4 + 1 respectively, here and there also occur in the headings of MS Cambridge CCC 9 instead of the numbers that should be expected. This also proves that G is not a copy of C, but a brother. The same conclusion must be drawn from the fact that the *Vita Wandregisili* (July 22) is found in its proper place in C, but not in Fell 1, where it is the last but one item in the index; it formed part of an appendix to the original collection in the exemplar, and was inserted under the appropriate day in C only.

For the common exemplar of CG I shall henceforth use the symbol Δ_2 .

R and F are independent not only of Δ_2 , but also of one another. Neither the group-readings labelled F_3R by Newport White (p. 215)

⁸) Cf also Newport White 215 (BF₃; Boll F₃) and 216 (ABF₃).

⁹) Cf W. LEVISON, M. G. H. *Scriptores rerum Merovingicarum* VII. 545, 601 f.; N. R. KER *Mediaeval Libraries of Great Britain* 116, note 1; M. R. JAMES *Descriptive Catalogue of MSS of CCC Cambridge* I. 13 ff.

nor the two other agreements which I have noted (238,9; 240,14-15) are proof of a common parent; and F cannot be a copy of R, because the former MS shares none of the latter's peculiar readings and transpositions¹⁰).

The place of P and V(v) is half-way between D on the one side and Δ on the other. Occasional agreement of PV(v) against the rest is purely accidental; all instances can be explained as either blunders or "corrections" of such type as any scribe was likely to make. Where D is available, P normally agrees with D, and V with Δ ; the better text is almost always found in DP. Some good readings are preserved also in DV (Dv) opposing the rest, but the reading of V(v) is often nothing more than a good guess; Papebroch (v) knew also the quotations from D in Primate Ussher's *Britannicarum Ecclesiarum Antiquitates*¹¹). Where D is missing, PV is normally right against δ , which means merely that δ has strayed from ϕ . Even P alone, opposing v δ , is as a rule to be preferred; there is perhaps some room for doubt where P is opposed by V δ ¹²). In the last analysis each case must be judged on its own merits.

In four places (DR missing) v Δ_2 agree against PF; but three of these agreements (246,15; 247,23; 255,8) are apparently independent alterations, and the fourth (254,8 *uiuo* PF: *uoui* vG. *noui* C) in its isolation, and in the absence of DR, proves nothing.

Lastly, there are some instances of particular agreement between P and Δ_2 :

238,15 *rusticus* DVRF: *rusticius* P Δ_2

241, 1 *ex toto corde* VFR (om D): *et ex toto corde* P Δ_2

241, 6 *canes repleti* D. *canes reuelati* VRF. *carnes releuati* P Δ_2

243,24 (D deest) *antequam* vRFG': *ante quod* P Δ_2

In the first two instances P Δ_2 are clearly wrong, but there is not necessarily a connection between them. In the third instance,

¹⁰ Cf NEWPORT WHITE 213, 318—20.

¹¹ Cf NEWPORT WHITE 209 f.

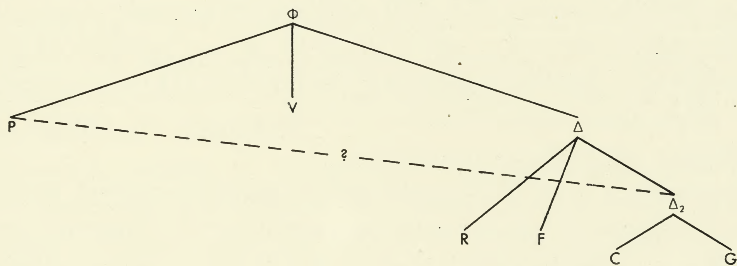
¹² E. g. 249,25 *in periculo* P: *in periculum* V δ (the ablative with *in* expressing direction is a common construction in the fifth century, but would hardly be introduced into a tenth century MS, if the scribe found the regular construction in his exemplar); 250,5 *quos* P ("sense construction"): *quas* V δ ; 251,27 *qui* P: *quia* V δ ; 259,12 *ut* P: *ita ut* V δ .

Φ probably read *canes releuati*¹³); the unexpected reference to dogs must have puzzled many a reader, and *carnes* for *canes* was suggested by the context. At 243,24 *ante quod* (vulgar for *ante quam*) is possibly genuine, see the Commentary. — A fifth instance is 240,15:

reppuli	sugere	mammellas	eorum	D
reppuli	sugire	mammās	eorum	V
repuli	fugere	manus	illorum	P
repulis	fugire	mammās	illorum	RF
repulsus sum	fugere	amicitias	illorum	Δ_2

The gradual disintegration of the D-text in Φ is obvious, but the steps are different for each of the four words; *amicitias* Δ_2 might be an interpretation of *manus* (P)¹⁴), but it could just as well be an explanation of *mammās* (see Commentary). Secondary dependence of Δ_2 on P is thus possible, but cannot be positively asserted.

Our study of group-readings would result in the following stemma of Φ :



P has on the whole a purer text than either V or Δ ; V, though basically superior to Δ , has been so much handled that the unsophisticated Δ is more reliable. For similar reasons F is preferable to R, and C to G.

Some time after these conclusions had been formulated the late Professor EÓIN MACNEILL communicated to me a note which he had drafted many years ago. I reproduce it in extract, because the great Irish scholar,

¹³) The VRF reading *reuelati* is a typical *uox ecclesiastica*.

¹⁴) So NEWPORT WHITE 544.

by a method entirely different from mine, has come to very similar conclusions. MACNEILL's symbols are of course those of Newport White.

"A stands apart from all the others. None of them is derived directly from A, or from A jointly with another copy. A is at the end of its own pedigree. P has much less readings peculiar to itself and has a larger number in common with others, but does not appear to be in direct line of parentage to any of them. . . . C and F appear to stand in close relation to each other, that is, so far as agreement in the variants is concerned. . . . Beyond that, there is little evidence of affiliated groups, and the promiscuity of common readings in the remainder seems to indicate collation rather than affiliation . . . Collation appears most evident in R . . . It may be noted that, of 29 instances of common variants between R and other MSS, 18 are common to CF. . . . The CF-stem, from which P and B are branches, is older than P and nearest to A. . . . F₄ shows traces of collation of the C-text with other copies, especially with P."

In my terminology, this means the recognition of Φ with its constituents PVA; only, I would be less positive as regards contamination of Δ_2 with P.

Φ was a MS of quite a distinct character, which is recognizable in several of its descendants.

V, a twelfth century MS, still exhibits occasionally such extraordinary word-divisions as *presta/nte* (50 v α 16), *respo/ndit* (51 v α 40), *ple/bs* (52 r α 6). Another example is found in F (11 v 4): *n/umquam*. Such extravagant syllabification is known as an Insular, and particularly an Irish, symptom¹⁵).

Abbreviations in all the six MSS are, as may be expected, generally of the continental type. Insular abbreviation is altogether absent from V — a legendarium intended for public reading. Misinterpretation of Insular symbols might, however, be at the root of the variant 237,24 *quia* (for *quod*) P Δ , and of the erroneous insertion or omission of *et* before *in* or *i-* at 246,4 (P δ) and 248,3 (PVF); Insular script explains the misreadings in 238,19 *russum* (for *sursum*) P, 238,24 *nethorici* (for *rethorici*) Δ_2 , and 242,18 *cortinentem* (for *continentem*) P.

Thus Φ presumably was either written in Insular script or copied from an Insular, probably an Irish, exemplar. The second alternative is suggested by the occasional confusion of *cum* and *con-*

¹⁵) Cf E. A. Lowe Codices Latini Antiquiores II p. viii.

(237,16 *cumbiberunt* PΔ, 251,21 *cūuenit* P). Such errors point to a MS in which, as in many MSS of the eighth and early ninth centuries, Insular and Continental abbreviations were employed side by side, and consequently *c̄* might denote either *con-* or *cum*. This would be the practice of Continental rather than Insular scriptoria. Φ, then, was probably a Continental copy of an Irish exemplar Φ'.

Φ'

The home and date of Φ can be determined with some probability. An Irish MS imported to Northern France and copied there by a Continental scribe late in the eighth or early in the ninth century would explain the existence of the Franco-Belgian copies PVR; the intimate relations of Norman French and Lotharingian ecclesiastics with their brethren in England during the tenth and eleventh centuries would then account for the eleventh and twelfth century English copies¹⁶).

There is even distinct palaeographical evidence to this effect. At 252,4 (only φ extant) PV read, correctly, *ualeo*, δ *uideo*. The meaningless δ-variant must be due to misreading; there is only one script in which *al* is liable to being read *id* — the “*ab*-type” of Corbie. This script was practised in parts of Northern France, including the areas of Arras and Soissons, in which P and V have been tentatively located¹⁷).

It seems possible to suggest also an approximate date for Φ'. In V, Confessio and Epistola have been inserted, against the ecclesiastical calendar, after the Life of St. Fursa, an Irish missionary in Northern France who was specially attached to the cult of St. Patrick. Fursa is said to have deposited relics of Patrick and

¹⁶) As has been pointed out by W. LEVISON *Scriptores rerum Merovingicarum* VII 545, Δ₂ is one of the three surviving copies (a) of an English Passional of the tenth century. The other two copies, MS Oxford Bodl. 354 (b) and the twin MSS Hereford P. VII. 6 and Fell 2 (c), do not contain the writings of St. Patrick. Apparently these texts did not belong to the original compilation, and were inserted into (a) from a different source — probably a single book, not a *Legendarium*. This view is supported by the fact that the other descendants of Δ, R and F, are not the type of a *Legendarium per circulum anni*, of which Δ₂ is an excellent specimen, but represent two different hagiographical collections made on no definite plan.

¹⁷) That the mistake was made in δ, and not in PV, is no objection. We do not know the links by which PVA are related to Φ.

other Irish saints in his foundation Péronne — only some fifteen miles up the Somme from Corbie¹⁸). A poem on St. Patrick by Cellanus, abbot of Péronne (d. 706) seems to betray knowledge of the Confessio¹⁹). If this circumstantial evidence is strong enough to suggest that Fursa took with him to the Continent a copy of Patrick's letters, the date of Fursa's departure — ca. 630 — would be the *terminus ad quem* for Φ' .

B. The Book of Armagh (D) and its Relation to Φ .

The Book of Armagh is the earliest MS of the Confessio known to exist. It does not contain the Epistola, and not even the complete text of the Confessio. In the latter, there are the following gaps: 26—29 *uidi* (243, 17—244, 13); 32—34 (244, 26—245, 28); 35 *ut*—37 (246, 6—22); 42—53 (248, 10—251, 13); 55 *sed*—61 (251, 26—253, 9). That the sections missing in D are genuine is proved by an allusion in Tírechán's Breviarium (fol 10v β 34) to Conf. 53, and also by the identity of style and diction in these chapters and in the remainder²⁰).

The cause of their omission is not quite clear. The fact that the missing chapters include most of the author's avowals of his human weaknesses makes one think of deliberate suppression. Yet this motive does not explain the absence of chapters 34 and 55—61; on the other hand, it would be strange that chapters 1, 2, 9, 10 should have escaped the purge. — On grounds of stichometry²¹) it

¹⁸) *Virtutes s. Fursei* 19; cf L. GUGAUD Les saints irlandais hors d'Irlande 148.

¹⁹) P. GROSJEAN AB 63 (1945) 73. — The lines of Cellanus were later at Saint-Wandrille (near Jumièges), whence they travelled to Southern Italy; the writings of Patrick might have gone the same way, see W. LEVISON Z.C.P. 20 (1936) 382—90.

²⁰) Cf NEWPORT WHITE 206 ff.

²¹) With negligible odds, both the gaps and the remaining text in D make multiples of 30 letters; the same is true of occasional omissions in some MSS of Φ . It would appear that 30 was the average number of letters to the line in the archetype. As regards the larger gaps in D, the number of "lines" missing and "lines" preserved varies from 13 to 19, or multiples thereof. Considering the habits of Irish scribes, 13—19 would not be too wide a margin for the number of lines to the page in the exemplar of D.

might be argued that the gaps correspond to pages or folios which in the exemplar of D had either been lost or had become illegible. However, none of the breaks leaves the thought incomplete, and there are no certain indications of re-adjustment. — Haste²²) can explain the omission of single words or short phrases, even of one or two lines (as seems to be the case in 242,1-3; 251,15.17-18), and, partly at least, the curtailment of some biblical quotations in Conf. 40²³). But would a scribe, however hasty, suppress whole pages of his exemplar?

The spelling of D is typical of early Hiberno-Latin MSS; it is the same throughout the codex, and has very little to do with the author of the Confessio.

D and Φ differ considerably in textual details. Apart from unintentional blunders in D²⁴) and frequent transposition of words, the two texts often part company in such a way that we have to state real variants, e. g.

- 235, 3 *contemptilibis sum* D: *contemptibilissimus* Φ
 235,10 *non oboedientes* D: *inobedientes* Φ
 237,14 *dedici* D: *legi* Φ
 237,25 *credit* D: *credidit* Φ
 238, 5 *animas* D: *animus* Φ
 238,24 *dominicati* D: *domni* (*domini* VR) *ignari* (*gnari* P) Φ
 239,14 *itaque* D: *igitur* Φ
 240,20 *quid, Christiane, tu dicis? Deus tuus etc* D: *quid est, Christiane? Tu dicis Deus tuus etc* Φ
 241, 2 *cui nihil est impossibile* D: *quia nihil est illi impossibile* Φ
 241, 7 *relicti* D: *derelicti* Φ
 241,16 *saxum ingens* D: *saxa ingentia* Φ
 242,17 *cui nomen Victoricus* D: *Victoricus nomen* Φ
 242,21 *Focluti* D: *uirgulti uelutique* P. *uirgulti . . . V. uirgulti ueluti* R. *uirgultique* F. *uirgulti uolutique* (*uolutique* del G') Δ₂

²²) So BURY *Engl. Hist. Rev.* 18 (1905) 544—6; *Life of St. Patrick* 226 f.

²³) 247,15 *reliqua usque dicit saeculi*; 247,20 *reliqua sunt exempla*; 247,10 (both D and Φ) *ecce ego mitto piscatores et uenatores dicit Dominus et cetera*. This is, however, a common practice of Irish scribes (cf Columbanus, *Epist.* 6, p. 178,22 Gundlach); in particular, the formula *reliqua usque dicit* is the normal way of indicating the extent of well-known liturgical texts.

²⁴) E. g. 236,7 *inerrabiliter* (cf 243,15); 237,1 *cognotatis*; 237,2 *perficere* for *per-spicere*, etc.

Impressed by the early date of D and its unique place in Patrician literature, generations of scholars believed in the absolute authority of this MS. As late as 1905, Newport White (p. 208) ruled that the readings of Φ , "although at first attractive, are found on mature consideration to be merely plausible emendations". This, I think, is saying too much. For example, 235,3 *contemptibilissimus* Φ is protected by the two preceding superlatives; 238,2 *quid peterem uel quid adpeterem* D looks like a conflate reading, and this suspicion has been strengthened since we know Patrick's model²⁵); at 240,20 there can be no reasonable doubt that the genuine reading is preserved in Φ , which has also the unanimous support of the Lives²⁶). Sometimes a doubt remains, and particularly so where the subject matter is problematical, as in 242,21 (*silua Focuti*).

We conclude that D and Φ are independent of one another.

The colophon of the Confessio in D reads: *Huc usque*²⁷) *uolumen quod Patricius manu conscripsit sua*. Does this mean that Ferdomnach copied the text from the author's autograph? Most scholars have been reluctant to assert this, and with good reason.

Nine times Ferdomnach distinctly acknowledges a blunder of D to have been found in his exemplar²⁸):

235,15 (s s and in margin) *serorem orarem*

237,15 (in margin) *utroque* (add: *incertus liber hic*).

237,19 (ss and in margin) *exaliue*.

238, 4 (in margin) \bar{n} *possum de/deeritis* (dots in triangle — the usual mark of deletion — over *possum* and the first *de*)

²⁵) D. S. NERNEY Ir. Eccles. Rec. 72 (1949) 23.

²⁶) Even NEWPORT WHITE, who followed D in his earlier edition, accepted the Φ -reading in 1918.

²⁷) Reminiscence of Dan 7,28 *hucusque finis libri*? Cf also Annals of Ulster, under 536 *huc usque perduxit Marcellinus Cronicon suum*; Tigernach, under 1008 (originally a marginal note) *hucusque Tigernach scripsit antequam quieuit*, see Rev. P. WALSH Ir. Hist. Stud. 2 (1940—1) 156.

²⁸) He does so by apposing against the text his "mark of query", a peculiarly shaped z. For explanations see NEWPORT WHITE 207, note; P. GROSJEAN AB 51, 122—4; 52, 411. The authentic interpretation ($\zeta\eta\tau\theta\sigma\alpha$) has been vindicated by P. GROSJEAN AB 53, 129—30. The device is characteristic of Insular scriptoria; it occurs, e. g., in MS Vat. Pal. 220 (Lorsch, saec. IX in.), fol 31r (facsimile: LINDSAY Palaeographia Latina III, pl. 11).

- 238, 12 (in margin) *ratum fortissimum scriptum*
 238, 13 (in margin) *rusticationem*
 239, 8 (in margin) *exagallias* (add: *incertus liber*)
 242, 1-3 (in margin) *uos estis annos* (a strange omission)
 243, 5 (in margin) *peritissime*

Except for the two passages on which Ferdomnach comments with *incertus liber* (*hic*) he does not seem to have doubted the correctness of his reading, but to have been puzzled by the text he had before him. In most instances Φ exhibits either the same or a similar corruption. If these readings were found in Ferdomnach's exemplar, it was not Patrick's autograph.

From the heading in D *Incipiunt libri sancti Patricii episcopi* we must conclude that the ultimate source of this MS contained more than the Confessio. In fact, $F\Delta_2$ count the Confessio as *Liber I*, the Epistola as *Liber II*. The colophon in D, however, states explicitly that the book (*uolumen*) which Patrick wrote with his own hand contained the Confessio and nothing more. Bury's remark²⁹⁾ that the colophon "ought, possibly, to have followed the Letter" is at best an escape.

The colophon in D is not an ordinary scribal *explicit*. It is an iambic octonar, with only one violation of prosody under the influence of prose accent³⁰⁾. I am inclined to regard it as a redactor's note, which was copied by Ferdomnach from his exemplar.

Originally this note would have its place in a collection of several *Libri Patricii*, and be to the effect that, whereas the Confessio — the first piece of the collection, — was based on the autograph, the text or texts that followed (among them most probably the Epistola³¹⁾ were not. If the ultimate source of Ferdomnach contained both the complete Confessio and the Epistola, it may be assumed that the gaps in the former and the loss of the latter were due to the same cause. Ferdomnach, who, under the personal supervision of his abbot,

²⁹⁾ Life of St. Patrick 227.

³⁰⁾ The Tigernach entry (note 27) is a hypercatalectic senarius (in pronunciation, Tigernach has only two syllables).

³¹⁾ A different interpretation of both heading and colophon of the Confessio in D by P. GROSJEAN AB 62 (1944) 50, will be discussed below, p. 25, note 47.

Torbach, compiled an official corpus of all available Patrician documents, is the last person to be suspect of wilful suppression; besides, we know from his own testimony that one at least of the minor gaps (242,1-3) was already in his exemplar. The loss must D' have occurred in some intermediate copy (D').

3. *The Exemplar* ω .

In D and Φ we notice a number of identical, or nearly identical, corruptions:

- 237,15 *qui optime itaque iure et sacras litteras utraque* (utroque D, in marg. z and *incertus liber hic*) *pari modo combiberunt* DP Δ . (V: *qui optime itaque sacris litteris imbuti sunt* — a ruthless alteration)
 238,12 *ratum fortissimum scriptum* D (in margin z): *ratum* (raptum R. rata G) *et fortissimum* (-e G') *scripta* Φ
 238,20 *ad retribuendam* (-a ex -um P. - \bar{u} ex -a G') all MSS
 239,8 *exagallias* (in margin z and *incertus liber*) D: *exgallias* VFC. *ex gallicis* G'. *gallias* R. *exgaleas* P.
 243, 5 *uerbis peritissime quos ego audiui* D (in margin z): *peritissimi* P. *peritissimis* vF Δ_2 . *perterritus* R

To this list may be added the *et cetera* as an abridgment of a biblical quotation (247,10 — all MSS, R missing), and two other passages, where all the available witnesses (DR missing) are evidently at fault:

- 248,20 *sed et illas* (*illae* Ware) *maxime laborant*
 248,22 *nam et* (om Δ_2) *siue tantum* (read *etsi uetantur*).

The conclusions from these premises are obvious:

- 1) D (D') and Φ have a common parent (noted by me as ω ; in the absence of R, as ω), which is thus the ancestor of all our MSS.
- 2) The colophon of the Confessio in D goes back to ω .
- 3) Since ω was not free from corruption, the text of the Confessio which it contained was not the autograph.

Was ω , then, the original collection which I have postulated? A study of the Lives of St. Patrick will provide the answer.

4. *The Indirect Tradition* (Ψ).

An indirect tradition of *Confessio* 1—2, 16—23, for which I introduce the symbol Ψ , is preserved in the earlier *Lives* of Ψ St. Patrick: *Muirchú* (*Muir*), before 700; *Vita* II and *Vita* IV *Muir* (V_2 , V_4)—companion texts, reflecting an earlier *Vita* (W) of $V_2 V_4 (W)$ perhaps eighth century date³²); *Vita* III (V_3), dated as of the ninth V_3 century by *Bury*³³); the Latin-Irish *Tripartite Life* (*Trip*), 895—901; *Trip(r)* the *Vita* by *Probus* (*Prob*), tentatively assigned to the middle of *Prob* the tenth century by *Mario Esposito*³⁴). Only the *Tripartite Life* is available in a critical edition³⁵); my text of the others is based on a collation of the MSS³⁶), from which I hope to edit these texts in due course.

This is not the place for discussing the interrelation of these documents, which would require a comparative analysis of the complete texts. So far as they borrow from the *Confessio*, all the *Vitae* reproduce a common source³⁷), to which I shall refer as *U*. *U* This source, a *Life* of St. Patrick based largely on his writings, is reflected in varying degrees of fidelity by three independent witnesses—in order of merit: *Bethu Phátraic*³⁸) (*BPh*, early *BPh*

³²) *BURY* in *HERMATHENA* 28 (1902) 186—207; *J. F. KENNEY* *Sources for the early history of Ireland* 1 (1929) 341; *L. BIELER* *Life and Legend of St. Patrick* 132, note 33.

³³) *TRANS. R.I.A.* 32 C 3 (1903) 216—8. — In one branch of the text tradition of V_3 (which I label Γ), c. 1—11 of V_2 have been prefixed; readings from this source will be noted as $V_{(3)}$. — My *sigla* for MSS of the Ψ -group are given on p. 107.

³⁴) *Studies* 2 (Dublin, 1913) 508.

³⁵) *K. MULCHRONE* *Bethu Phátraic*, *R.I.A.*, 1939. The text that can be critically restored (*r*) reaches back to a date some time before 936.

³⁶) Cf my *Codices Patriciani Latini*, p. 18—37.

³⁷) To prove this formally here would lead us too far. I intend to deal with this problem in a comparative study of the *Vitae S. Patricii*, which I outlined last year in two lectures delivered during the Colloquium of the Celtic School in the Dublin Institute for Advanced Studies. Readers of this Introduction are referred to my apparatus of the reconstructed Ψ -text (below, p. 108 ff.), and in particular to my reconstruction of *Conf.* 19.

³⁸) The independence of *BPh*, *J*, and *Muir* follows primarily from a comparative analysis of contents. Group-readings are neither numerous nor absolutely decisive, because the series of witnesses is hardly ever complete; moreover, where *Muir* is

eighth century?) — the ancestor of Trip (r) and W; the common J source of the respective chapters in V₃ and Prob ("J", of undetermined date); and Muirchú³⁹). In BPh, Conf. 1, 2, 16, 17 and 20 are quoted in the first person; the remainder has been turned into narrative in the third person. In J, all is in the third person, but the narrative follows its source closely enough for a reconstruction of the underlying text. Muirchú gives for the greater part merely a *regestum* of his *Vorlage*; only bits of Conf. 1, 17, 21, 22, and the beginning of 23 are reproduced more literally. The author of U probably quoted Patrick's statements concerning his spiritual life in the saint's own words, but reported external events in ordinary narrative — a distinction that was maintained only in BPh.

The title of Ψ, to judge from the phrases by which literal quotations are introduced in BPh⁴⁰), was *Libri epistolarum sancti Patricii episcopi*. This collection contained:

- 1) the Confessio, from which all the Lives borrow freely;
- 2) the Epistola⁴¹), which was known, though indirectly, to Muirchú and through Muirchú to V₃ and Probus⁴²);
- 3) a fragment of some letter otherwise unknown (preserved in BPh only)⁴³);

available, Prob depends on him entirely and V₃ is to some extent under his influence. The following group-readings may, however, be of interest: C 16 (239,19) *niuem* ω: *nubem* BPh (J Muir missing); *nihil mali sentiebat* J = ω: *om* BPh (Muir missing); C 17 (239,24) *responsa* Muir (*responsum* ω): *uocem* W. V₃. Prob; C 19 (240,18—19) *post triduum ceperunt (tenuerunt V₃) terram et* (Prob differs) *uiginti octo (quator V₃ pr gTin) dies ambulauerunt per desertum* J: *post triduum terram ceperunt et uiginti octo dies per desertum iter fecerunt* V₂ = ω (rV₄ not comparable); C 20 (241,16) *saxum ingens* V₄.r^{Colg}. V₃ = Conf^D: *saxa ingentia* Muir (Prob) = ConfΦ. The Ψ-text apparently contained variant readings.

³⁹) Similarly as the Tripartite Life that has survived, BPh must have been a text in which Latin was mixed with Irish — a thing not uncommon in early Irish hagiography; contrary to the later text, the greater part of BPh was probably in Latin.

⁴⁰) See the headings in the reconstructed Ψ-text, pp. 108—11; cf also the title of D *Incipiunt libri sancti Patricii episcopi*. All these headings have been collected by P. GROSJEAN AB 62 (1944) 46, note 5.

⁴¹) P. GROSJEAN l. c.

⁴²) Cf BURY Life of St. Patrick 317.

⁴³) This fragment was used by Papebroch for the supplementation of a lacuna in Conf. 24; but the words of the fragment *audiebam quosdam psallentes in me* cannot well be reconciled with Patrick's avowal (243,4) *nescio, Deus scit, utrum in me an iuxta me*.

- 4) a fragment from Patrick's letter to the bishops of Mag Ái; it is quoted from *Libri Patrici* in MS Cotton Otho E. xiii (saec. X or XI) fol 132b, and preserved also (in a slightly different form) in the Book of Armagh (fol 9rα, p 301, 11-17 Stokes)⁴⁴;
- 5) the *Dicta Patricii*, or rather, as P. Grosjean⁴⁵ assumes with good reason, some larger texts from which these Dicta were extracted⁴⁶;
- 6) possibly other letters of which nothing has survived, for example the first letter to the soldiers of Coroticus (mentioned in Epist. 3), which was confused with the existing Epistola by either Muirchú or his source, or the letter to the abbess Cecubris of Cruimduchan (referred to by Jocelin, Vita s. Patricii 79 ex); perhaps even the spurious letter quoted by Jocelin earlier in the same chapter⁴⁷.

⁴⁴) P. GROSJEAN AB 62, 44—65.

⁴⁵) Ibid. 50—51.

⁴⁶) Dictum 2 is almost certainly derived from Epist. 17. Dictum 1, according to Tírechán, occurred in *commemoratione laborum*; this was hardly the title of his source, cf Conf. 35 *longum est autem totum per singula enarrare laborem meum uel per partes*, and the lemma in Trip (R, fol 124rα) *De labore multa*, referring to a quotation of Conf. 16. The authenticity of the last Dictum (if it is one, and not two) is disputed.

⁴⁷) According to P. GROSJEAN AB 52, 412; 62, 46—51, the heading *In libris Patrici* in MS Otho. E. xiii and the same words in a gloss on Trip r1461 bear witness to the existence of a more comprehensive collection of texts concerning St. Patrick (not only his own writings, but also Tírechán, Muirchú, the Additamenta and Notulae of LA, and other items), which was known by that title; the same collection, P. GROSJEAN maintains, is referred to in the heading of the Confessio in D. The *Libri Patrici* in the Cottonian MS and the Tripartite gloss doubtless mean "Books about St. Patrick"; I have assumed the same meaning for Ultan's *Liber Patricii*. More instances of this usage are given by P. Grosjean (AB 62, 48 f.; only in LA fol 21 vβ *post uero exitum Patricii sancti alumpni sui ualde eiusdem libros conscripserunt* I guess from the context that the *libri* were canons); I add Nennius 41 *hic est finis Guorthigirni, ut in libro beati Germani* (probably a Life of St. Germanus) *repperi*. Such vague references, however, do not necessarily prove the existence of one identifiable collection; many texts concerning St. Patrick may have been in circulation, either singly or in lots, without leaving a trace. That the heading in D refers to this hypothetical collection is even less demonstrable. This heading occurs in the middle of fol 22rα (the second leaf of a quire!) and is preceded by all the other Patriciana. Whatever may have been the original arrangement of the first three quires of D, there is no evidence to show that the Confessio was to be given the first place; on the other hand, if we assume that Ferdornach copied the heading from his exemplar, and that the latter was the collection of *Libri Patricii* which Père Grosjean postulates, then we have to ask why Ferdornach rearranged his materials in such a strange way. In view of these difficulties I hesitate to accept this suggestive theory.

The date of Ψ remains conjectural. The *Libri Epistolarum* were known to Tírechán from a *Liber Ultani*, *Liber apud Ultanum* (301,1-3), a book in the possession of Tírechán's master, bishop Ultan of Ardrbraccan, who died about 657. A slightly earlier *terminus ad quem* is suggested by the variants at Conf. 21 (242,6) *nocte illa sexagesima* D: *sexagesimo* (-a) *die* Muir (Prob): *nocte illa sexagesimo die* Φ , where Φ seems to be contaminated from D and Ψ . If so, Ψ is earlier than Φ , which I have tentatively dated as 'before ca 630'.

A tentative reconstruction of Ψ will be given as an Appendix; here I shall merely discuss its affinities with D and Φ .

- C 1(235,10) *non oboedientes* D. Ψ (= V_2 ₃): *inobedientes* Φ
 C 2(235,15) *conuerterem* (-er Δ) Φ . Ψ (= V : *conuerteremur* V_2): *confirmarem* D. (*Conuerterem* is probably a conflate reading, see Commentary; *conuerterer* Δ and *conuerteremur* V_2 are secondary emendations)
 (236, 2) *muniuit* D. Ψ (= BPh): *monuit* Φ . (The original had perhaps the vulgar spelling *moniuit*)
 C 19(240,21) *quid est* ($\Phi\Psi$: om D) *Christiane?* *Tu dicis* \langle quia Ψ , but om in V_2^B \rangle *deus tuus magnus et omnipotens est; quare ergo non potes pro nobis orare* ($\Phi\Psi$: *pro nobis orare non potes* D)?
 (241, 2) *quia nihil est impossibile illi* V. *quia n. e. illi imp.* P Δ . *quia nihil imp. est illi* Ψ : *cui nihil est impossibile* D.
 (241, 3) *satiimini* D: *satiemini* Φ . Ψ (= W; deest J)
 C 20(241,18) *inter haec* (Φ). Ψ (= V_4): *in hoc* D
 C 21(242, 5) *duobus* \langle autem D \rangle *mensibus* D. Ψ (= Muir): *duos menses* (Φ)
 C 22(242, 9) *decimo* D. Ψ (= Muir): *quarto decimo* Φ
 C 23(242,14) *nusquam* D: *numquam* $\Phi\Psi$

This list can teach us two important lessons:

- 1) the *same* witnesses for Ψ agree partly with D and partly with Φ ;
 - 2) most of the readings supported by Ψ are intrinsically superior.
- Ψ is thus in all probability independent of Ω .

The surest proof of independence would be the existence of distinctive Ψ -variants. U has, in fact, not a few readings of its own, but we cannot affirm positively that any of them goes back to Ψ . Quite a number presumably do, and of one, at least, this

is morally certain. At Conf. 19, 240, 23 f., we read: *ego enim euidenter* (ω : *confidenter* V_4 . om rV_2 ; cf *firmiter confisus* r^{Colg} ; *nolite desperare* Prob) *dixi illis: Conuertimini* (Φ J, -*emini* D: *confitemini* V_2 . -*emur* V_4) *ex fide*, etc. *Euidenter* does not suit the situation. It is Patrick's confidence in God that makes him speak so assuredly. *Confidenter*, although preserved in V_4 alone, was apparently the reading of W (cf *confitemini* V_2); traces in r and Prob seem to indicate that it was also the reading of U ; and, as *lectio praestantior*, it can be vindicated for Ψ .

Ψ and ω may, then, be regarded as two independent copies of the archetype.

In several places some of the witnesses for Ψ agree with D , the others with Φ :

- C 18(240, 7) *adpetes ire* D. (*ibis* V_2 Prob): *adpetas ire* Φ . V_2^H (variant in Ψ : *appetes* / *l-appetas* / *ire*?)
 C 19(241, 12) *immolaticium* V_2 : *immolaticum* D. Muir (Φ uncertain)
 C 20(241, 16) *saxum ingens* D. V_4 (r^{Colg} V_3): *saxa ingentia* Φ . Muir
 C 23(242, 22) *sancte puer* D: *sanctum puerum* Φ] *sancte puer* (\langle Patrici Dg \rangle V_3^π (*sancte Patrici* V_4): *sanctum puerum* V_2 . (+ *Patricium*) V_3^Γ . (V_3 took over variants from Ψ)

The explanation, I think, is that Ψ contained a number of variant readings, which were either derived from an earlier exemplar, or entered by the scribe of Ψ from a different copy⁴⁸).

5. The Archetype (Σ).

If, as has been suggested, Ψ and ω are independently derived from the archetype (henceforth symbolized by Σ), we shall, by studying Ψ , be enabled to look behind ω and form some opinion of an earlier document, which is the source of all our evidence, whether direct or indirect. Σ

⁴⁸) This explanation does not seem to apply to C 2 (236, 2) *consolatus est mei* D: *consolatus est me* Φ] *c. est mei* r : *c. est me* V_2^H . $V_{(3)}$. (*me* om $V_2\beta$). Here *mei* is certainly *lectio difficilior*, and possibly genuine; Patrick might, after all, have construed *consolari* with the genitive, after the analogy of *misereri*. The corrections in Φ and V_2 would then be independent.

The archetype Σ must have contained all that was in either Ω or Ψ , that is to say, *Confessio*, *Epistola*, the letter to the bishops of Mag Ái, the letter to which belongs Fragment 1, the source or sources of Dicta 1 and 3, and such other letters as were accessible to the editor.

The title of this edition, as that of Ψ , probably was: *Libri epistolarum sancti Patricii episcopi*. Each letter counted as a single book; the *Confessio* formed Book I, the *Epistola ad milites Corotici* Book II⁴⁹). The title has survived partly in D and partly in BPh. There seems to have been no title in Φ ; P and R have none, and the *incipits* of the *Confessio* in V and FΔ₂ are evidently the *impromptus* of scribes.

Ψ would appear to have been an integral copy of Σ . Whether this is true also of Ω we cannot tell; it certainly contained *Confessio* and *Epistola*. Φ never contained more than these two pieces, which were not only the first in order, but probably also the longest and most important ones in the collection.

On what sources could the redactor draw? The apostle of Ireland was not a man of letters. He would set himself to write but occasionally and for some actual purpose. Like his great model, St. Paul, he would send letters to remote churches or even abroad, when necessary. Although he never thought of editing his letters, he would keep copies for his own record — all the more so as writing did not come to him easily⁵⁰). It was different only with the *Confessio*. This work, an "open letter", written in defence of his vocation and mission, was from the beginning intended for wide circulation. A number of copies were probably made simultaneously, and Patrick kept the autograph for himself. The place where these files — autograph of *Confessio*, copies of the other letters — were kept is probably Armagh, or perhaps Saul⁵¹). Σ is nothing more or less than a publication of these files. It was only natural for the

⁴⁹) Cf the colophon of the *Confessio* in δ : *Explicit liber primus. Incipit <liber G> secundus.*

⁵⁰) As P. Grosjean points out (AB 63, 106), Patrick seems to have re-read his *Epistola* before dictating the *Confessio*.

⁵¹) Bury *Life of St. Patrick* 207, thinks the *Confessio* was written at Saul in Ulster.

editor to record the fact that the *Confessio* was edited from the autograph, and to indicate clearly the point up to which this autograph extended. This was probably also one of the reasons why the *Confessio*, a work of Patrick's old age, was given pride of place. Thus the colophon of D almost certainly goes back to Σ . The precious note was transmitted in the successive copies of the Church of Armagh; outside the *ciuitas Patricii*, scribes were indifferent to this detail and did not bother to hand it down.

For the date of Σ we must leave a wide margin. If it is correct to say that Φ' , and a fortiori Ψ , are of earlier date than ca 630, Σ cannot fall later than in the first third of the seventh century. As a *terminus a quo* we have only the death of Patricius (461, or, according to others, ca 492). There is no definite indication of any particular date within this period.

In reconstructing Σ , we have regained two hundred years or more of textual history and gone back from the time of Ferdomnach to a period that precedes the great Armagh movement of the seventh century or, at the latest, coincides with its beginnings.

The text of the *Libri Epistolarum*, and in particular that of the *Confessio*, rests on good authority. Had Ψ come down intact, Σ could be restored almost mechanically. Even the sporadic traces of Ψ that have survived are most important, especially because they allow us to appreciate more fully the value of Φ .

6. *The Later History of the Text.*

The several copies of Σ have had a very different history. Ψ , which seems to have preserved the files complete, recommended itself to Irish hagiographers as an authentic source for their Lives of St. Patrick. Of Ω , which was perhaps merely a selection, one branch (Φ), containing *Confessio* and *Epistola*, was, at an early date, taken to the Continent, where these texts, as substitutes for a regular *Vita*, found their way into a number of *Legendaria*⁵²).

⁵² In V₄ 16 the *Confessio* is referred to as *liber quem de uita et conuersatione sua ipse composuit*; the hagiographer, who knew no more of the *Confessio* than what was quoted in his source, erred more pardonably than the scribe of V, who heads this text *Incipit Vita beati Patricii*.

Of another branch, nothing survived but a defective text of the *Confessio*, which was eventually united with other *Patriciana* in the Book of Armagh (D).

The early medieval biographers of St. Patrick, including William of Malmesbury⁵³), still consulted the *Confessio* occasionally in addition to their main sources, through which they knew of the same document indirectly. Later hagiographers, beginning with Jocelin⁵⁴), merely expand or abridge secondary sources.

Confessio and *Epistola* were rediscovered during the seventeenth century by Ussher and Ware in England, and Denis in France⁵⁵). In 1656, Ware gave the learned world the *editio princeps* of the works (some spurious) of St. Patrick; the Saint-Vaast codex discovered by Denis was edited by Papebroch in 1668.

The eighteenth and nineteenth century editors of *Patricius* were almost entirely dependent on their predecessors. A. W. Haddan's remarks on the *recensio* of these texts⁵⁶), valuable as they are, had no immediate effect; his own edition has been left to us with all the imperfections of a posthumous work.

Textual criticism of the *Libri sancti Patricii* entered a new phase with Dr. Newport White's edition of 1905, which was followed by an *editio minor* in 1918⁵⁷). From the point of criticism as well as of documentation these editions rank high above all that was then in existence. Unfortunately, Newport White in his earlier edition, which was made without knowledge of P, followed D too closely;

⁵³) According to John Leland, the antiquary of Henry VIII, William quoted the *Confessio* frequently, but in Leland's extracts from William's lost *Vita* there is only one such quotation (Conf. 52). See C. H. SLOVER in MODERN PHILOLOGY 24 (1926) 5—20; L. BIELER *Codices Patriciani Latini* p. 37.

⁵⁴) Jocelin probably knew neither the *Confessio* nor any other of Patrick's genuine letters; his remarks (185) *unde et in epistolis suis se peccatorem ultimum, minimum, contemptibilem omnium nominare consueuerat* may be merely an echo of the spurious letter quoted by him in 79.

⁵⁵) The exiled Irish Franciscans at Louvain had no knowledge of these texts except for the quotations in the *Lives* and in Ussher. These fragments were printed as an appendix to the *Vitae* of St. Patrick by John Colgan in his *Trias Thaumaturga* (1647).

⁵⁶) See above, p. 11, note 1.

⁵⁷) S.P.C.K. Texts for Students, No. 4. (London).

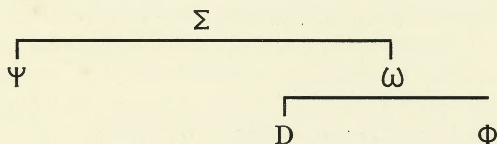
in his later edition, he gave too much credit to the newly discovered P; in neither of them is the indirect tradition systematically exploited. These are the reasons that have called forth the present endeavour.

II. PROBLEMS OF TEXTUAL CRITICISM

1. *Principles.*

The *recensio* of the *Libri Epistolarum* is based on the following principles:

- 1) We can never go beyond Σ , and normally not beyond ω ; where D is missing, we can at best establish the text of Φ .
- 2) Σ must be reconstructed from Ψ and ω ; ω , from D and Φ :



- 3) The *consensus* of Ψ and ω gives almost absolute certainty.

Where D and Φ are at variance, the reading supported by Ψ is generally to be preferred. Where Ψ is missing, neither D nor Φ have better claims to be trusted; our judgment depends on internal evidence. Where different groups of Φ disagree, the reading supported by D will, as a rule, be preferable. Where D is missing, and only Φ can be reconstructed, the agreement of PV (and even that of Pv) is a fairly safe guide; the cases P:V(v) δ and V(v):P δ must be decided individually.

Σ was apparently a careful edition, and Ψ a faithful copy of Σ . In ω some blunders slipped in, and some more were made in Φ . Since Ψ and D are not always available there remains a limited scope for conjectural emendation.

2. *Individual Cases.*

These principles cannot always be applied mechanically. In the following, I am going to discuss some problematical passages.

238,24 *dominicati rethorici* D: *domni* (*domini* VR) *ignari* (*gnari* P) *rethorici* (*nethorici* Δ₂) Φ

There is some uncertainty about the reading of Φ. So much is clear that the scribe had *dominicati* before him, and that he understood this to mean *domini cati*. *Domni* is supported by all MSS of Φ except VR — the two that have been “edited”; *gnari* is the reading of P alone. I think Φ wrote *domni ignari rethorici*; *ignari* was the scribe’s reaction to *cati*. The *gnari* of P is a mere haplography; one does not gloss a rare word (as *catus* is in Christian literature)⁵⁸ by one that is still rarer. (P. Grosjean points out to me that *domni ignari* and *domini gnari* contain an equal number of minims in succession. However, P reads *domni* (not *domini*) *gnari*.)

239,15—16 *magis ac magis accedebat amor Dei et timor ipsius et fides augebatur et spiritus agebatur* D] *timor Dei et timor illius* Φ. (*augebatur*;) *agebatur* P. (*agebatur*;)—*augebatur* PF: *magis ac magis accedebat* (V₂^β, cf *accessit* Gielemans: *accendebatur* V₂^H. *accrescebat* r. *crescebant in me* [post *timor*] V₄. *deest* J) *amor Dei* <in me r> *et timor ipsius* (*timor Dei et amor ipsius* V₃ [*ipsius* om Π]) *et fides* (om V₂^H) *et spiritus* (r: om W.V₃) *augebatur* (om V₄) <in me V₂^H> (*et fides ipsius augebatur post paruum interuallum iterum* V₃) Ψ

There is much confusion on the surface, but fundamentally, I think, matters are pretty clear. *Amor Dei et timor ipsius* DΨ is evidently right against Φ (where the first *timor* is a sort of regressive assimilation), and *fides et spiritus augebatur* Ψ, which invited tampering, has its root in the confusion of *augebatur* and *agebatur*, of which there is some evidence also in Φ. Most interesting are the variants at *accedebat*: it seems that the unusual expression was glossed in Ψ by (*ac*)*cresceba(n)t in me*; from this store the hagiographers helped themselves according to their tastes. Quite of its own order is V₂^H with *accendebatur amor Dei et timor ipsius augebatur in me* — unmistakably a scholar’s emendation, and one that would do credit even to a modern editor⁵⁹).

⁵⁸) See D. S. NERNEY *Ir. Eccles. Rec.* 72,268, note 1.

⁵⁹) “Ceci concorde bien avec le caractère général de cet Hubertinus, qui me semble avoir été un ms. revu par un grand érudit de la renaissance carolingienne.” P.G.

240,5 *et gubernator (gubernatori D.VFG' [post gub- R mutil]. Ψ) displicuit illi (om VG'.Ψ). (gubernatori autem displicuit V)*

Although *gubernator* has no better authority than PΔ₂ (G a c ?), it is obviously the true reading. Strange as it may seem, the biblical construction of the nominativus pendens has provoked the corrector's zeal. The dative *gubernatori* and the suppression of *illi* are, I think, the work of one hand. The variant must be of considerable antiquity. If it was entered above the original text in Σ, we could understand its erratic distribution as well as the fact that *illi* after *gubernatori* has been retained in the unrelated MSS D and F. I admit, however, that there are other possibilities.

241,17 *sed unde mihi uenit in spiritum ut Heliam uocarem D: sed unde me (mihi G') uenit ignarum (ignoro G') in (et FR) spiritu Heliam uocarem (uocare PG') PΔ. sed unde me uenit ignoro <in spiritu r^{Colg}> ut Heliam uocarem (in- s l) V₄. (sed unde uenit ignoro ut spiritu Heliam inuocarem v, cf inuocato Helia Muir^B. inuocans Heliam Jocelin)*

This is perhaps the most perplexing passage of the whole text. D makes plain reading, but in the original *uenit* must have been followed by *ignarum*, *ignoro*, or something similar — most probably *ignaro*. The text of ΦΨ may then be reconstructed as *sed unde me uenit ignaro in spiritu ut Heliam uocarem?* — and so, I think, Patrick wrote⁶⁰).

242,9—11 *donec decimo die peruenimus homines. sicut superius insinuaui uiginti et octo dies per desertum iter fecimus et ea nocte qua peruenimus homines de cibo uero nihil habuimus] peruenimus (1): praeuenimus v. homines (1) PV: ad homines Δ₂. Muir (Prob). ad omnes R. omnes DF. peruenimus (2): praeuiimus v. homines (2) P: ad homines Δ₂. omnes DvR. sicut — homines (2) om F. Ψ deest*

Newport White wrote *omnes* (D) in 1905, *homines* (P) reluctantly in 1918. Although in the second instance evidence is scanty, the problem is both times the same. The 'correction' *ad homines* might occur to any scribe, and *omnes* (DF and DvR respectively) gives some support to *homines*. Thus *peruenire homines* "to reach people" must probably be accepted as Patrician.

⁶⁰) For interpretation, see Commentary.

248,7—8 *quomodo nuper facta est plebs Domini* D] *nuper facta* PC. *nuper effecta* V. *nuper perfecta* FG

By some scribal idiosyncrasy the reading of Φ appears to have become *nuperfecta*; from this the alterations in V and FG may have originated.

251,21—22 *quod mihi melius conuenit paupertas et calamitas quam diuitiae et diliciae* D] *dilicię et diuicię* V: *deliciae et diuitiae* G'. *dilitias et diuitias* PFA₂ (R deest)

The transposition is common to Φ , the accusative to P Δ . The nominative has been restored by emendation in G', and possibly also in V. D and Φ seem to have read *diuitiae et diliciae* and *dilicias et diuisias* respectively.

252,21—22 *quoniam ex ipso et per ipsum et in ipso regnaturi sumus* Δ_2 : *quam ex ipso regnaturi sumus* P. om F. *quoniam ex ipso et per ipsum et in ipso sunt omnia; ipsi est gloria in saecula saeculorum amen. In illo enim regnaturi sumus* v (DR desunt)

Here the true reading has incidentally been preserved in Δ_2 . P has a blunder (misreading of an abbreviation) and an omission by homoioteleuton; similar causes might be responsible for the gap in F. Papebroch (or, possibly, the scribe of V) completed the biblical quotation (Rom 11,36) and added some words as a link with *regnaturi sumus*.

3. Biblical Quotations.

Our principles are least applicable to variants that occur in biblical quotations. Medieval scribes, who knew their Bible largely by heart, were always apt, either consciously or unconsciously, to substitute to the biblical text of their exemplar the one to which they were accustomed. It is often the most intelligent and conscientious scribes that go farthest in biblical standardization. Patrick's bible text was partly Old Latin, partly Vulgate, and partly a transitional version⁶¹), but the earlier elements are not preserved in all

⁶¹) See L. BIELER *Der Bibeltext des heiligen Patrick*, in *BIBLICA* 28 (1947) 31—58, 236—63 (with bibliography).

MSS, and not always in the best ones. As was seen already by Newport White⁶², V (v) and R frequently correct Old Latin quotations according to a standard text (generally the Vulgate); in a lesser degree this is true also of DP; FΔ₂ are almost unaffected. Thus biblical variants in our text must be judged on their own merits; the older and rarer variant will normally have a better claim.

Here are some illustrations⁶³:

Epist. 4, 254, 23-24 (DR missing) *qui facit peccatum seruus est* <peccati Pv>. It is difficult to imagine that the ancient "Western" text of Joh 8, 34 (witnessed by *b d D^{gr} Clem sy^s*) has been restored by the scribe of Δ. The insertion of *peccati* in Pv is most probably a correction.

What, then, are we to say of Conf. 7, 237, 6-8? Here Φ must have read (Matth 12, 36) *pro eo rationem* (PVFΔ₂), which is the reading of *d g₁ k μ E* (*rationem pro eo* JLQ) and also of Irenaeus and Cyprian. *De eo rationem* (R) has the support of *a f ff_{1,2} g₂ h δ gat* and *VULG^R*. D (in both Confessio and New Testament) has the typical Vulgate text *rationem de eo*. R obviously corrects the Φ-text — (imperfectly) after the Vulgate rather than after some other version. Why, then, should D not be corrected after the Gospel text of Armagh?

Again, Conf. 40, 248, 5 (DR missing) *dictum est eis* (Rom 9, 26) is the reading of P alone; the other MSS omit *eis* (with *w* in Os 1, 10). The insertion of *eis* is probably another correction after the Vulgate.

Conf. 54, 251, 18 *numquam mentitur* is found in φ for the original *non mentitur* of Tit 1, 2, which is the reading of D. Quoting from memory, Patrick may well have written the more emphatic *numquam*, which, in turn, has been corrected after the Bible text in D (or D').

In other cases, judgment must be suspended. Did Patrick quote 2 Cor 3, 3 (Conf. 11, 238, 12) with the rare variant *uestris* (so D, corresponding to *ς* and some other Greek MSS)? The words of the apostle are given a new turn, and Patrick's meaning is not absolutely clear.

⁶²) P. 216—9.

⁶³) My *apparatus biblicus* is explained on pp. 47—53.

Conf. 38, 246, 28, P alone quotes Ier 16, 19 with the O. L. variant *ab extremo*; all the other MSS have *ab extremis*. This, however, is the reading of both the "Hebrew" and the "Septuagint" text in Jerome's commentary on Jeremiah, and the reading is strongly supported by the *ab extremis* of all MSS in a reference to the same verse only two lines above. Here P may have altered the text of Patrick's quotation, perhaps after August. Civ. Dei XVIII. 33.

Conf. 39, 247, 4-5 *uenient ab oriente et occidente* (<*et ab austro et ab aquilone* D>) *et* (om δ) *recumbent cum Abraam et Isaac et Iacob* (Matth 8, 11). D is probably interpolated from Luc 13, 29; a similar "conflate" text is found in Irenaeus IV. 8, 1. In Epist. 18, 258, 17-19, where D is missing, the quotation recurs in the same rare form, with *uenient* in the beginning, but the words *et ab austro et ab aquilone* are absent. VULG^D is also uninterpolated. What did Patrick write? We cannot tell. Purging of a conflate text and interpolation of a pure one are equally possible, and D is no absolute authority.

Conf. 40, 247, 8-9 *et faciam uos fieri piscatores hominum* (*fieri* om Pδ). In the identical verses Matth 4, 9 and Marc 1, 17, *fieri* is omitted only by a small number of O. L. authorities: by *h m δ Aug Ambr Gaud* in Matthew, by *b* and *r*₁ in Mark. In the Greek, γενέσθαι is original in Mark, but has been inserted in Matthew by a number of MSS, including N^b and D. We cannot say which of the passages Patrick had in mind; his Gospel text may have had *fieri* in either place. Perhaps *fieri* should be suspected as a common reading; but its omission may be due to haste and need not necessarily be a biblical variant.

Problematical is Conf. 2, 235, 14 *et ibi Dominus aperuit sensum incredulitatis meae* (DΨ: *sensum cordis mei incredulitatis* Φ). The support of *sensum incredulitatis meae* could hardly be stronger. Yet, the phrase is a mosaic of biblical reminiscences: *sensus cordis mei (nostri)* is found in Ier 4, 19 and Bar 1, 22; *aperire sensum* in Luc 24, 45; *aperire cor* in Act 16, 14; finally, in Heb 3, 12 we get *cor malum incredulitatis*. We should thus be inclined to assume that Patrick, combining Luc 24, 45, Bar 1, 22 and Heb 3, 12, coined the phrase as it is in Φ. However, since the genesis of the phrase is a matter of speculation, it seems safer to stick to our principles.

Instructive, if less problematical, are also the following instances:

- 236,7 *quae est sub omni caelo] quae sub caelo est* V. *quae est sub caelo* R. (VULG Act 2,5 *quae sub caelo est] quae est sub caelo* D Aug. No authority for *quae est sub omni caelo*)

Patrick certainly wrote *sub omni caelo*. The "editors" of V and R changed according to their standard texts, V most probably according to the Vulgate.

- 237,5 *perdes eos qui loquuntur mendacium] perdes qui* C. *perdes omnes qui* VR. (Ps 5,7 *eos qui* PsV^{pl}; *omnes qui* [cum LXX] TEST^{alq}. VULG.)

It is idle to ask what (if anything) has been dropped by C; VR introduce the Vulgate text.

- 241,1 *conuertimini ex fide ex toto corde ad Dominum Deum meum* RF: *ex fide* om V.J. *et ex toto corde* PΔ₂.V₂. *ex toto corde* om D. (Ioel 2,12 *conuertimini ad me in toto corde uestro* VULG. *ex toto corde uestro* VL^{pl})

Ex fide "sincerely" is one of Patrick's stock phrases, cf Conf. 18. 23; it is no part of the quotation. The original text has survived only in RF; PΔ₂ insert *et* between the two complements, and the scribe of V and the author of J seem to have cancelled what they would regard as an interpolation, although they left the non-vulgate *ex* untouched. The omission in D was caused by homoiotes.

- 241,12 *immolaticium est] immolaticum* D. Muir^B. *immolatum* PV. *immolatum* FG'. *im(in-R)molatium* RC. *immolaticium* V₂

Immolaticium (1 Cor 10,28) is preserved in V₂, and only slightly obscured by the blunders of Δ⁶⁴) and D Muir. The lectio facilior *immolatum* is a biblical variant of somewhat erratic occurrence (*t V W vg Aug^{sem}*). Here, as in the Bible, it seems to be a spontaneous commonsense substitution. There is no reason for assuming any connection between the readings of D and Muir, P and V respectively.

⁶⁴) For *immolatum* RC cf 244,2 *in una: incina* G. — *Immolatum* (FG') was originally written by the first hand in the Amiatinus; it is also the reading of Harl. 1775 (saec. VI/VII).

- 243,6 *qui dedit animam suam pro te* D. *qui dedit pro te animam suam* P.v (not from Ussher). *qui pro te animam suam* RF. *qui pro te animam suam posuit* Δ_2 . (1 Ioh 3,16 VULG and O.L. *ille pro nobis animam suam posuit*, but *animam suam pro nobis* m. Aug^{sem}.vg)

The substantial agreement of DPv leaves no doubt but that ω read *qui dedit*; in the continuation, the D-reading is recommended by the rhyming cadence: *qui dedit animam suam pro te, ipse est qui loquitur in te*. *Dedit* was probably dropped in Δ ; *posuit* was supplied from the Vulgate in Δ_2 .

- 247,9 *ecce mitto piscatores* DP: *ecce ego mitto piscatores* v Δ . (Ier. 16,16 *ecce mitto* Ambr in Ps 118. *ecce dismitto* Virg: *ecce ego mittam* Tert. VULG)

By the agreement of DP, the O. L. *ecce mitto* is vindicated for ω ; *ego* v Δ has probably been inserted from the Vulgate, but the correction stopped half-way.

- 253,1—2 *sed manebit in aeternum quomodo et Christus manet in aeternum* (*manet* v: *permanet* P. *manebit* F. *permanebit* G. *quomodo* — *aeternum* om C) DR desunt

Accidentally, the true reading is preserved only in v. The words *quomodo* — *aeternum* (Ioh 12,34) are inserted in 1 Ioh 2,17 by a small number of O.L. witnesses, all of whom, except Cyprian, support the *manet* of v⁶⁵). The variant elements of the verb, *per-* and the ending, must be treated separately. The compound *permanere* is, perhaps, a reflex of *permanebit* in 252,23; P and G may be independent of one another. The ending *-et* is supported by Pv, *-ebit* by FG (probably Δ); the latter, meaningless in its context, echoes, I think, the *manebit* in 253, 1.

4. Conclusions.

The editor of the *Libri Epistolarum* will do well to face the inevitable limitations of his work.

He must aim at the restoration of the text of Σ — an edition

⁶⁵ For *manebit* (so all MSS of the Confessio) in 1 Ioh 2,17, our biblical texts have the variants *manet*, *permanet* and *permanebit*.

made, perhaps, within 150 years from the author's death. The redactor, it would appear, abstained from interference not only with the contents of Patrick's letters, but also with their style. The endlessly protracted λέξις εἰρουμένη (somewhat obscured by the liberal punctuation of modern editors), the capricious, yet always comprehensible progress of ideas, the directness and warmth of expression, all this has unmistakably the personal touch of the extraordinary man. Even grammar and spelling, I think, were hardly touched. The language of *Confessio* and *Epistola*, as we read them to-day, is so typically "pre-Romance" as would be unthinkable in Ireland after the fifth century.

Even though the existing evidence for Σ varies greatly, the text is on the whole reasonably certain. *Cruces editorum* there are, but not more than in many other texts of that period.

Problems arise mostly with regard to minutiae, esp. spelling. The "Hiberno-Latin" spelling of D has little or nothing to do with Patricius. The MSS of Φ and the sources for Ψ generally exhibit the average spelling of the later Middle Ages. Occasionally faint traces appear to be left of a spelling strongly reminiscent of Jordanis or Gregory of Tours⁶⁶); we are hardly mistaken in claiming such details for Σ . Apart from these relics it seems best to resign oneself to the standard spelling of our schools. In this, as in other small matters, the rusticity of which Patrick accuses himself can no longer be fully realized; on the other hand, a solecism in some MS may be merely a slip of the pen. The editor has to make his choice, which must sometimes be subjective; for discussion there will be room in the Commentary.

III. PLAN OF THE PRESENT EDITION

1. *The Text and Apparatus.*

The text of the present edition is based on my *recensio codicum* as outlined in Chapters One and Two. In its external arrangement

⁶⁶) Cf *Conf.* 2 *muniuit* D Ψ : *monuit* Φ (*moniuit* Σ ?); *consulatus* D (for *consolatus*); *Conf.* 45 *monstrata* P: *ministrata* V δ (*munstrata* ϕ ?); *Conf.* 9 *incederem*; 10 *desertis* (for *disertis*), a. o.

it follows line by line the *editio maior* of NEWPORT WHITE (Dublin 1905); White's sometimes erroneous lineation has been silently corrected. The division into paragraphs is also that of Newport White.

The text is accompanied by a threefold *apparatus*.

The first section of the *apparatus* contains *Fontes* and *Testimonia*. Mere *Similia* will find a place in the Commentary. The evidence of Ψ , of which a complete reconstruction is printed as an Appendix, has also been excluded.

The second section is the *apparatus criticus*⁶⁷. It is a negative *apparatus* for DVP $\Delta\Psi$, but not for ν (Papebroch), whose readings have been recorded only where they are likely to represent the text of V, or where they deserve mention as *coniecturae*. However, ν is always included in (Φ) or (ϕ) after a variant, and in those text readings from which only one MS differs, e.g. at 243,19, where only (Φ) is available, *in aeternum*] *et internum* R means that *in aeternum* is the reading of P ν F Δ_2 .

The third section is an *apparatus biblicus*. This is, in my opinion, an indispensable instrument for the criticism and interpretation of the text, and for a study of Patrick's quotations as testimony to the Old Latin version of the Bible. For assistance in this matter I am greatly indebted to His Lordship the Abbot of St. Mary's, Buckfast, Devon, and to Mr. F. G. Rendall, of the British Museum. References are strictly limited to quotations and to such allusions as give evidence of a definite version. Mere echoes and biblical phraseology will be discussed in the Commentary.

2. Spelling.

In the MSS of Patricius the following variants of spelling are comparatively frequent:

- 1) *ae* — *e* — *e* (— *oe*)

The spelling *ae* occurs often in DP, occasionally in C, rarely in FRG, never (I think) in V. In most of our MSS *ae*, *e*, *e* and (rarely)

⁶⁷) I have followed as far as possible the recommendations of the Union Académique Internationale (S. BIDEZ and A. B. DRACHMANN *Emploi des signes critiques, disposition de l'apparat dans les éditions de textes grecs et latins* 1938).

oe are interchangeable; *oe* is more often spelled *e* (*ę*, *ae*) than vice versa. *Ae* for *e* is frequent only in D, of which it is a feature (*caeteri*, *aepistola*, *aeuangelio*, etc); besides, I have found it once in C (*aeclesia* 257,21). The use of *ę* and *e* does not seem to imply a phonetic distinction: *ętiam*, e. g., is almost the rule in VF, *-quę* and the adverbial (rarely the ablative) ending *-ę* prevail over *-que*, *-e* in F. The archetype probably distinguished between the diphthong and the simple vowel.

2) *e* — *i*

I stands for *e* 22 times, *e* for *i* 18 times. Of these forty instances, 21 are individual readings of D. Among the remainder, some have considerable support, e. g. 237,14 *incederem* PVFΔ₂ (*inciderem* R); 238,4 *desertis* PFC (*dēritis* D): *disertis* VRG; 238,11 *deserta* ω; 251,22 *diliciae* (-*e*, -*as*) ω (*deliciae* G'). All these "vulgar" spellings may go back to the archetype⁶⁸). One wonders whether at 237,23 Patrick wrote *quatinus* (with DFΔ₂) or *quatenus* (with PVR)⁶⁹), at 243,7 *gaudibundus* (DV) or *gaudebundus* PΔ; I have decided for the normal spelling in these cases, but for *internicionem* (DΔ₂, cf *internitionem* P) against *internetionem* (VF) at 251,24 f., and (hesitatingly) for the V-readings *percepimus* and *recognoscet* (against Pδ) at 258,4.22. — Interchange of *e* and *i* is not confined to unstressed syllables, cf 237,14 *incederem*; 238,1 *adoliscens* (D; *ad[h]uliscens* FΔ₂); 240,9. 242,8 *itenere* (D); 250,20 *dimedio* (C), etc.

3) *o* — *u*

This phonetic change is less frequent. It is found in D or P or Δ (δ), but rarely in more than one of them at a time. Spellings of the archetype seem to be 257,4 *iocundare* (Pδ) and 240,8 *tegoriolum* (D), where the normal form *tuguriolum* may have been restored independently in Φ and Ψ.

⁶⁸) Non-orthographical seem to be the variants 237,21 *dinoscetur* D: *-itur* Φ (γνωσθήσεται LXX); 240,13 *recipimus* D: *recepimus* (-*cęp*- V) φ; 243,15 *exp(re)mi* D; 246,4 *exp(re)mere* D; 250,20 *dimedio* C; the last three are possibly instances of recomposition.

⁶⁹) Cf K. E. GEORGES Lexikon der lateinischen Wortformen 579.

4) *y — i*

Hyberione etc is the spelling of V(v) throughout, *cybus* etc the normal spelling of P (joined occasionally by F); all MSS consistently read *proselitus*. For the rest, deviations from standard spelling are neither frequent nor well attested.

5) *Initial h*

There is little uncertainty as regards the aspiration of initial vowels. I count only seven instances of pleonastic *h* and three of an *h* omitted. It seems best to follow the MS evidence: *habunde* DV 236,20; *habundat* DPVR 241,3; *habundanter habuerunt* PVF — D is missing — 241,10. In 257,24 VF *abundat* has been retained against PΔ₂ *habundat*, because there is no intrinsic cause for aspiration.

Most of the spellings listed under (1) to (5) are normal phonetic changes from classical Latin to Romance, and are amply evidenced in Vulgar Latin, particularly in Gallic inscriptions and early Merovingian charters⁷⁰). Spellings that are rare in these sources (e. g. those of the types *cicidit*, *inductus*, *motarunt*) are rare also in the MSS of Patricius, except for the change of accentuated short *i* to *e*, which is fairly frequent in D: *incederem* and *dedici* C 9, *itenere* C 18, 22, *conuertemini* C 19; it is common, however, in Old Irish loanwords from Latin⁷¹).

6) *Consonants*

Peculiar to D is the duplication of consonants, especially of *s* (*missertus*, *missericordia*, *otiossum*, etc), and a small number of counter-mistakes (*presurae* 241,22; cf *pluiam* 239,19)⁷²); further,

⁷⁰) See MARIO A. PEI *The language of the eighth century texts in Northern France* (New York 1932), Part I.

⁷¹) M. A. PEI l. c. 25—27; J. VENDRYES *De Hibernicis vocabulis quae a lingua Latina originem duxerunt* (Paris 1902) 36—7; cf P. LEHMANN SB Munich, phil-hist Klasse 1918, 38 f.

⁷²) For parallels, see H. SCHUCHARDT *Der Vokalismus des Vulgärlateins* II. 472 ff. O. HAAG *Die Latinität Fredegars* (1898) 39 f. — Duplication of consonants is found also in F: 243,5 *perritissimis*; 243,9 *interiorem*; 249,1 *ressiduum*; 252,15 *misserrissime*, and once (242,6 *sexagessimus*) in C. For *euuangelium*, etc (always in PVR, once in F) cf SCHUCHARDT II 522 f.; HOSKIER *The Golden Gospels*, p. xiv.

the constant dissimilation in the word *baptizo*⁷³), and one or two unusual spellings that fall in no particular class⁷⁴). Similar spellings are found in all sections of D and also in other Irish MSS⁷⁵); they do not necessarily testify to the original spelling of Σ ⁷⁶).

7) *The following spellings are found only in MSS of Φ :*

a) *ti* for *ci* is frequent in PR, rare in VF, and, as far as I can see, completely absent from Δ_2 . *Ci* for *ti* occurs only in V.

b) *michi* is typical of V⁷⁷). RF; Δ_2 has almost always the ambiguous *m̃* (C has now and then *mihi*). *Nichil* (*nichilominus*) prevails in V Δ .

c) The assimilated forms *nunquam*, *unquam*, *nunquid* etc are characteristic of VG⁷⁸); they are found but rarely in the other MSS.

d) Forms of the type *inquid*, *uelud*, *aliquit* occur in PRF.

None of the spellings which I have listed, with the possible exception of *ss* for *s* and accentuated short *e* for *i*, can be considered distinctly Hibernian.

It is noteworthy that some spellings on which all, or at least the leading, MSS of the *Libri Epistolarum* agree, are typical of Bible MSS, for ex.

calciamentum (Conf. 50): VL(b). VULG^{om}.

imunda (Conf. 41): the dissimilation has, as a rule, the better support in the Vulgate Gospels (Wordsworth-White, *Nouum Testamentum* I. 758); it is the normal spelling of most MSS of the Octateuch.

inchoaui (Conf. 43, V δ): VL (*Lugd Aug*); Argumentum Marci; cf GEORGES Wortformen 344.

⁷³) Such spellings as *obtimo*, *abtauit*, etc are common in Late Latin, cf SCHUCHARDT I 144 f.

⁷⁴) Cf Newport White's list, 317 f.

⁷⁵) Duplication of *s* is a feature of r_2 (Garland of Howth) and Augiensis 253 (saec. V—VIII).

⁷⁶) It is perhaps no accident that forms of the type *uenierunt*, which are not rare in other parts of D (e. g. in Muirchú), are (with the exception of 241,11) absent from the D-text of the Confessio. (One instance occurs also in F: 245,11 *audienter*.) There are late Latin parallels (SCHUCHARDT I 36; DIEHL *Vulgärlat.* Inschr. 1169, 1; al.) for these, but none for the purely Hibernian spellings of the *uidiarunt* type so characteristic of r_2 .

⁷⁷) 248,27 *mihi* V is written over an erasure by a late imitating hand.

⁷⁸) 248,6 *numquam* V is the second, 'modernizing,' hand.

iocundare (Epist. 13): *iocundor* VL Luc. 12, 19 (*c e*); cf Commodian, *Instructiones* II. 17, 6.

loquela (Conf. 9, all MSS except *lingua* V): frequent in DEP K V W *vg.* (Wordsworth-White I. 759).

uenundo (Epist. 15): normal spelling in VULG.

Octateuch MSS (see the orthographical index in the new Vatican edition, IV. 393—490) give authority to such spellings as *contempnor* (Epist. 1), *dilicias* (Conf. 55), or *obprobrium* (Conf. 26.37). The spellings *deglutio* (Epist. 12) and *inuerbis* (Conf. 10) are also frequently recorded from MSS.

All these forms may be claimed for the archetype.

In the matter of assimilation and dissimilation, and related phenomena, I have, as a rule, followed the better textual evidence, although it may be illusory. If the only instances of *ex-* before *s* *impura* are spelled *expectamus* (236, 17: *exspectamus* F), *expectare* (247, 3: *aspectare* F), and *inextinguibilis* (255, 22, all MSS), it is reasonable to adopt this spelling. On the other hand, 246, 26 *sumsit* (D) — the sole form of the perfect stem in our text — may or may not be original. (With this exception, LA consistently reads *sumpsi*, *sumptus*, etc.)

Not all variants of spelling have been recorded in the *apparatus criticus*. Considering the importance of D, I have noted all its spellings except the interchange of *ae* — *ę* — *e* — *oe*. Φ-spellings classed under (1) and (7) have been dropped except if they seemed to bear on textual criticism; all the others are fully recorded.

3. Punctuation.

Modern punctuation is rather misleading when applied to ancient or medieval texts. We moderns distinguish units of sense; the ancients and their medieval disciples distinguished units of recitation. The ideal form of presentation for an ancient or medieval text would be a division *per cola et commata*, as in the editio maior of the New Testament by Wordsworth and White, with the medieval punctuation marks instead of ours.

In the case of Patrick neither system can be applied without violence to the vagueness of structure that is so characteristic of his style. I have tried a *via media*, which, though far from ideal, will at least explain how I understand the text.

ADDITIONAL REMARKS CONCERNING THE
APPARATUS BIBLICUS

1.

Biblical texts are quoted from the following editions:

Septuagint: H. B. SWETE *The Old Testament in Greek*, 3. ed., 1901—5; A. RAHLFS' *editio minor*, Stuttgart 1935 (only Psalms and Isaiah from the Septuaginta Gottingensis: Psalmi ed. A. Rahlfs, 1931; Isaiah ed. J. Ziegler, 1939); A. E. BROOKE and N. MACLEAN *The Old Testament in Greek* (so far as published until 1940).

Hexapla: ORIGENIS *Hexaplorum quae supersunt*, ed. Fr. Field, Oxford 1875.

Greek New Testament: H. v. SODEN *Die Schriften des Neuen Testaments* I. 4 (1913); H. J. VOGELS *Novum Testamentum Graece*, 2. ed., 1922. — For Acts, the special editions by F. Blass (1895), J. H. Ropes (1926), and A. C. Clark (1933) have been inspected, for the first two Gospels the revised edition of Westcott-Hort's New Testament (by S. C. E. Legg, 1935; 1940).

Vulgate: Old Testament: The volumes so far published (Gen — Reges) of the new Vatican edition by Dom H. Quentin and his followers; The rest (except Psalms) is quoted from P. M. HETZENAUER *Biblia sacra uulgatae editionis ex ipsis exemplaribus Vaticanis inter se . . . collatis* (1906), with collation of A(miatinus) from Th. Heyse — C. DE TISCHENDORF *Biblia sacra Veteris Testamenti* (1873) and P. DE LAGARDE *Mittheilungen* I. 1884 (Sap, Eccli). The palimpsest fragments of early Vulgate texts published by A. DOLD (Beuron) have not been available. — For editions of the Psalter, see below, p. 46, 49—51.

New Testament: Matth to Heb are quoted from I. WORDSWORTH-H. I. WHITE, *Nouum Testamentum Domini Nostri Iesu Christi* (1889—1941); the rest, from the *editio minor* by H. I. White, 3. impr., 1931. — For Gospels, I have, in addition, consulted H. C. HOSKIER *The Golden Latin Gospels JP in the Library of J. Pierpont Morgan* (1910); C. H. TURNER *The Oldest Manuscript of the Vulgate Gospels* (Σ = Sangallensis 1395, an Italian MS, ca. 500 A.D.), 1931 and the supplements by A. DOLD and P. LEHMANN, *Zentralblatt für Bibliothekswesen* 50 (1933) 50—76, 709—17; A. DOLD, *Biblica* 22 (1941) 105—46; B. BISCHOFF, *ibid.* 147—58; L. J. HOPKIN-JAMES, *The Celtic Gospels* (1934). — The Autin palimpsest (ed. by A. ROYET, *Revue Biblique* 31—32) exhibits no relevant variants.

The sigla for Greek and Vulgate MSS are those commonly used; where

parallel editions differ, I follow Swete, Vogels, Quentin and Wordsworth-White. — M-T = Codex s. Martini Turonensis (Tours 22) s. VIII.

Old Latin (O.L.) Version (Vetus Latina, "Itala"):

Old Testament: P. SABATIER *Biblorum Sacrorum Latinae Versiones Antiquae* (1751), and the special editions listed below, p 49 ff.

Psalter: The history of the O. L. Psalter, the translations of St. Jerome, and the liturgical texts known as the Ambrosian and Mozarabic Psalter is largely problematical. From the studies of Rev. P. Capelle, A. Allgeier, Dom de Bruyne, A. Rahlfs and others, we may draw the following conclusions:

- 1) The Latin text of the bilingual *Psalterium Veronense* (R) has connections with Africa; it may possibly be the Psalter of St. Augustine.
- 2) The *Psalterium Romanum* is not a work of Jerome, but a pre-Benedictine "western" psalter of uncertain date (Dom Wilmart, however, defends Jerome's authorship).
- 3) The Mozarabic Psalter is related to the *Ps Romanum*, but has come under the influence of the African text and the *Psalterium iuxta Hebraeos*.
- 4) St. Jerome's earliest version of the Psalter is probably evidenced by quotations in his *Commentarioli* and in letters of ca. 384/5. (These quotations do not concern the editor of St. Patrick).
- 5) Among the existing O. L. Psalters we can distinguish an African group (Tertullian, Cyprian, Augustine, Prosper, *Liber Promissionum*; codd *Veronensis*, *Sangallensis*); an Italian group (Ambrose, Theodore of Mopsuestia, the text of the Ambrosian Commentary, *Ps Romanum*); a Gallican group (earlier text: cod *Vaticanus*, Hilary; later text: codd *Sangermanensis*, *Corbeiensis*, *Carnotensis*, *Augiensis I*); a Spanish (?) group (*Coislinianus*, *Augiensis II*). The *Psalterium Casinense* (M) stands apart. [A different grouping is suggested by P. Capelle.]

Our apparatus will comprise: *Ps(alterium)V(etus)* with its subgroups (as above), *Gall(icanum)*, *Heb(raicum)*, *Med(iolanense = Ambrosianum)*, and *Moz(arabicum)*. Only Heb is available in a critical edition of some merit (J. M. Harden, 1922); for the other texts, the responsibility is entirely mine. Unfortunately the collations of A. Allgeier (*Die altlateinischen Psalterien*, 1928) were out of reach, and the purest witness to Gall (*Reginensis 11*) was known to me only from the incomplete notes in the editions of A. F. Vezzosi (in: J. M. Thomasii *opera omnia* 2, 1747) and A. Rahlfs (in his Göttingen edition of the Septuagint Psalter). — My text of the *Ps Rom* is based on the *editio Romana* of 1663 (reprinted by Tommasi-Vezzosi, 1747, and Vallarsi-Maffei, *S. Hieronymi opera* 10, 1740 = Migne PL 29) and the Latin-Saxon psalters, esp MS Cotton Vespas. A. i (ca. 700).

New Testament: John — Heb are quoted from the apparatus of Wordsworth-White, controlled and supplemented from the original editions. For the other books, the *apparatus* has been compiled from the sources. I regret that I have not seen H. C. Hoskier, Concerning the Text of the Apocalypse (1929) and A. JÜLICHER — W. MATZKOW Das Neue Testament in der altlateinischen Übersetzung nach den Handschriften herausgegeben. I. Matthaeus (1938); II. Markus (1940). — The partial collations of Moling and Dimma (Lawlor, Hoskier) have been supplemented from photostats of the Book of Moling in the National Library, and from the original Book of Dimma in Trinity College, Dublin.

The Hebrew Old Testament and the Eastern versions will only occasionally have to be quoted.

2.

The *apparatus* is arranged as follows:

- 1) As a basis I use the version that is either identical with Patrick's or nearest to it; variants from this text are listed in order of relationship.
- 2) MSS symbols in the first place after a bracket refer to the text immediately preceding; subsequent variants within the brackets are separated by a colon. For example, 241,2 *do* (b c e ff₂ l q: *apud dm* VI^{ectt}.VULG) means that *Deo* is the reading of MSS b c . . . q, *apud Deum* that of the other O. L. MSS and the Vulgate.
- 3) Reference to the Old Testament is always by chapter and verse of the Vulgate, even where the Septuagint differ.
- 4) The *nomina sacra* are represented by contractions, but without contraction marks: *ds*, *dns*, *ihs*, *xps*, *sps*, *scs*, and correspondingly in the oblique cases.
- 5) The books of the Bible are, with few exceptions, referred to as in Corp. Script. Eccl. Lat.

3.

Lists of symbols for biblical MSS are given by Swete, Vogels, Wordsworth-White (also in the editio minor by H. I. White), Hoskier (Golden Latin Gospels 75—8) and Hopkin-James. To these the following list is supplementary.

I wish to remark that m (Speculum) and t (Comes Toletanus) have been compared by me for all quotations, and that by m^s I designate the codex Sessorianus, by m^Σ the consensus of the other MSS of Speculum; further, that in the Gospels the siglum t has been replaced by t' in order to avoid confusion with the Bern fragment of Mark, which is commonly noted as *t*.

Old Testament:

Heptateuch:

Mon(acensis Clm 6225, saec. VI; ed L. ZIEGLER *Bruchstücke einer vorhieronymianischen Übersetzung des Pentateuchs*, 1883)

Virceburgensis Mp. theol. f. 64^a, saec. V—VI; ed E. RANKE *Par palimpsestorum Wirceburgensium*, 1871)

Lugd(unensis 403 [329] + 1964 [1840]; ed U. ROBERT *Heptateuchi e codice Lugdunensi uersio*, 1881)

Ottob(onianus 66, saec. VIII; ed C. VERCELLONE *Variae Lectiones Vulgatae Latinae* 1 [1860] 183 f., 307—10)

Philat: Fragments of Gen preserved in a Latin translation of Philo, ed F. G. CONYBEARE, in *The Expositor*, 4. ser., IV. 63 ff., 129 ff.

Reges:

legion: Legionensis S. Isidori (a. 930) The O. L. text from the margin of this MS has been edited by C. VERCELLONE *Variae Lectiones* 2 (1864).

(I have not seen the fragments of 2 Reg edited from MSS Vienna 17 and 15479 by Belsheim and Haupt. The Quedlinburger Italafragmente, ed H. Degering-A. Boeckler, 1932, are not comparable.)

Tobias, Iudith, Ester, Iob:

Monac(ensis Clm 6239, saec. IX; ed J. Belsheim, *Libri Tobit, Iudith, Esther*, 1892)

Sang(allensis 11, containing Jerome's "hexaplaric" version of Job; ed C. P. Caspari, 1893)

Ecclesiasticus (Iesus Sirach):

ver: Fragmenta Veronensia saec. VI; ed C. U. CLARK *Trans. Connecticut Academy of Arts and Sciences* 15 (1909) 7—18.

Prophets:

k: the Constance-Weingarten fragments, ed A. DOLD *Konstanzer altlateinische Propheten*, 1923

g: Sangallensis 1398, saec. X; ed A. DOLD (as above).

g₂: Sangallensis 1398b; ed A. DOLD *Neue St. Gallener vorhieronymianische Prophetenfragmente*, 1940.

w: Virceburgensis (as in Heptateuch)

crypt: Palimpsestus Isaiae Cryptoferratensis, ed I. COZZA, *Sacrorum Bibliorum uetustissima fragmenta*, 1867

(The fragments of the St. Gall Jeremiah (MS 912) contain none of Patrick's quotations.)

All other O. L. MSS of the Old Testament (Psalter excepted) are quoted from Sabatier.

New Testament:

Gospels:

h_2 : Harleianus 1023, saec. X. Mixed Vulgate. Ed E. S. BUCHANAN Sacred Latin Texts 3, 1914

St. Paul:

r_2 : Fragmenta Frisingensia, ed Dom D. DE BRUYNE (Collectanea Biblica Latina 5, 1921)

w: Würzburg Mp. theol. f. 12, saec. VIII(?). Mixed Vulgate. Ed. L. C. STERN, 1910.

Catholic Epistles:

(d: Codex Bezae, as in Gospels: 3 Ioh 11—15, which Patrick does not quote).
ff: Corbeiensis (Leningrad Qv 1,39) saec. IX—X. Ed I. WORDSWORTH, Studia Biblica (1885), 113 ff. (James only)

h: Fragmentum Floriacense (same as in Acts), saec. VII.

l: Laud. lat. 43, saec. XIII. Ed E. S. BUCHANAN Sacred Latin Texts 4 (1916). It should be noted that Buchanan's 'l' is Laud 108 (= O of St. Paul in Wordsworth-White).

q: Fragmenta Frisingensia (Munich, Clm 6220, 6230, 6277), saec. V—VI. Ed. Dom D. DE BRUYNE, (see r_2 of St. Paul): 1—2 Petr., 1 Ioh.

s: Fragmentum Bobiense (same as in Acts), saec. VI: James, 1 Petr.

z: Harleianus 1772, saec. IX. Ed E. S. BUCHANAN Sacred Latin Texts 1 (1912). St. Paul (Z in Wordsworth-White), Catholic Epistles, Apocalypse. The MSS. l and z are 'mixed' texts.

Apocalypse:

gig. and h as in Acts.

l and z as in Catholic Epistles.

The New Testament of Tertullian and Irenaeus, and the Gospel text of Augustine are given after the special editions by H. ROENSCH (1871), W. SANDAY — C. B. TURNER (1923), and C. H. MILNE (1926).

Psalter:

It seems best to give a complete list of the texts that I have compared.

Psalteria Vetera (PsV):

R: Veronensis i, saec. VI. Ed J. BIANCHINI Vindiciae canonicarum scripturarum 1740.

P: St. Gall, MS. 912, saec. VI. Ed A. DOLD and A. ALLGEIER Der Palimpsestpsalter im Codex Sangallensis 912 (Beuron 1933). [Not comparable]

A: Ambrosianus C. 301 inf., saec. VIII, Ed G. I. ASCOLI (1878); R. I. BEST (1936). — 'A' stands only for the main commentary, so far as it does not represent the text of Theodorus.

amb: the text of the incomplete commentary prefixed to A.

M: *Psalterium Casinense* (MS 557, saec. XII/2). Ed A. AMELLI *Collectanea Biblica* 1 (1912).

V: *Vaticanus Regin.* 95, saec. X (collated from the editio Parisina of St. Hilary, 1605).

G: *Sangermanensis* (Paris, BN lat. 11947, saec. VI). Collated from Sabatier.

C: Old Latin text of the *Psalterium Corbeiense* (Leningrad F. 1. 5) saec. VIII. Collated from Sabatier's notes.

carn: *Carnotensis* 22 (30) saec. X. Collated from the Maurists' apparatus to St. Augustine's *Enarrationes* and from Sabatier's notes.

aug¹ (saec. VI) } Fragments in cod. *Augiensis* ccliii, ed by A. DOLD
aug² (saec. VII) } and B. CAPELLE, in: *REVUE BÉNÉDICTINE* 37 (1925),
pp. 181—223.

H: *Coislinianus* 186, saec. VII—VIII. Collated from Sabatier's notes. I have also made use of the collations by P. CAPELLE, *Le texte du psautier latin en Afrique* (*Collectanea Biblica Latina* 4, 1913).

Psalterium Romanum (Rom):

t: editio Romana 1663 (Tommasi-Vallarsi-Vezzosi, see above).

A: *Cotton Vespas. A. i* (ca. 700 A. D.). Ed J. STEVENSON (1843—7); H. SWEET (1885).

C: *Cambridge UL Ff. i. 23*, saec. XI. Ed K. WILDHAGEN, 1910.

E: *Cambridge, TC, R. xvii. 1* (*Psalterium triplex*), saec. XII. Collated from the Facsimile ed. M. R. JAMES, 1935.

P: *Parisinus lat. 8824*, saec. XI/1, ed B. THORPE, 1835.

miss: *Missale Romanum, Mediolani* 1474.

Psalterium Gallicanum (Gall):

R: *Reginensis* 11, saec. VIII. Collated from Vezzosi and Rahlfs, see above.

C: *Dublin, R. I. A. 'Cathach of St. Columcille'*, saec. VI (?). Ed H. J. LAWLOR, 1916.

W: *Tironian Psalter, Wolfenbüttel*, saec. VIII—IX. Ed O. LEHMANN, 1885.

U: *Utrecht Psalter*, saec. VIII—IX. Collated from the Facsimile (London, Palaeographical Society, 1874).

Φ: The Alcuin recension, collated from De Bruyne (*Revue Bénéd.* 41, 297—324) and Vezzosi.

tr: *S. Hieronymi tractatus in psalmos*, ed G. MORIN, *Anecdota Maredsolana* III/2—3 (1903).

Aug: *S. Augustini enarrationes in psalmos* 67, 87, 106—8, 118 (Migne).

vg: *Vulgate*, ed P. M. HETZENAUER, 1906 (see above).

P: *Palatinus* 39, saec. XI. Collated from Vezzosi's notes.

E: same as in Rom.

F: BM Stowe 2, saec. XI. Ed J. SPELMAN, 1640.

I: Lambeth Palace 427, saec. X. Ed U. LINDELÖF, 1909.

Bruno: Bruno Virceburgensis, Commentary on the Psalms (saec. XI), Migne PL 142.

As far as I can see, Jeromes' letters 65, 106, 140 are not comparable.

Psalterium Hebraicum (Heb):

The symbols are those of Harden, plus E (as in Rom). A(miatinus) has been checked up in Heyse-Tischendorf, R(icemarch Psalter) in Henry Brashaw Society Vol 47, Sp in Weihrich's edition of Augustine's Speculum.

Psalterium Mediolanense Ambrosianum (Med):

mil: Psalterium Milanense 1555. Collated from Sabatier's notes.

man: Manuale Ambrosianum ed M. MAGISTRETTI, 1905.

rev: Psalterium Mediolanense reuisum (Vaticanus lat. 82, saec. IX). Collated from Vezzosi's notes.

Psalterium Mozarabicum (Moz):

Moz^O: Breuiarium secundum regulam b. Hysidori ed A. ORTIZ, 1502. Collated from Sabatier's notes.

Moz^L: Breuiarium Mozarabicum ed A. LORENZANA, 1775 (reprinted in Migne, PL 86).

Moz^G: The Mozarabic Psalter (MS BM Addit. 30851, saec. XI), ed J. P. GILSON, 1905 (Henry Bradshaw Society, vol 30).

Moz² = Moz^{LG} (see P. CAPELLE Le texte du psautier latin en Afrique 221—5; Capelle's Moz¹ = Moz^O + Cauensis [inaccessible] has hardly ever been noted in our apparatus).

Testimonia Patrum:

These have been noted only on a small scale, mostly where other Old Latin evidence is scanty. The following are quoted more frequently:

Greek and Eastern:

Clem(ens Alexandrinus)	Orig(enes)
Clem(ens) Rom(anus)	Ephr(aem)
Iust(inus)	Tat(ianus)

Latin:

Ambr(osius)	Cass(ianus)
Ambrst (Ambrosiaster)	Cassd (Cassiodorus)
Aug(ustinus)	Cypr(ianus)
Beat(us)	Faust(us)
Ben(edictus)	Fulg(entius)

Gelas(ius)	Pel(agius)
Gild(as)	Prim(asius)
Hier(onymus)	Prisc(illianus)
Hier ^{LXX} : sec. LXX.	Prom (Liber de Promiss.)
Hier ^{HEB} : sec. Hebraeos.	Prosp(er Aquitanus)
Hil(arius Pictaviensis)	Rebapt(ismate, Liber de)
Hil(arius) Arel(atensis)	Ruf(inus)
Iren(aeus)	Secund(inus)
Iul(ius Firmicus Maternus)	Sed(ulius)
Leo (Magnus)	Tert(ullianus)
Lucif(er Calaritanus)	Tyc(onius)
Max(imus Taurinensis)	Vict(orinus Petauionensis)
Mops (Theodorus Mopsuest.)	Vict(or) Tun(ensis)
Nou(atianus)	Vig(ilius Thapsuensis)

Biblical authorities are quoted normally in the following order: Old Latin MSS, Fathers, Vulgate; occasional references to Hebrew, Greek and the Eastern versions are inserted after the variants which they support. Within each group I have observed the established order; for the Old Testament in the O. L. version, where no such order exists, my arrangement is chronological or geographical, viz

Heptateuch: Mōn Virc Lugd Ottob m Testimonia

Prophets: k g g₂ w crypt m t Testimonia

Psalter: Tert Cypr Aug R Ambr Mops A amb M Rom V Hil G C carn
aug¹ m H aug² Gall Heb Med Moz.

4.

For considerations of space, I have devised a condensed form of annotation. The following list will speak for itself.

HEB(rew text).

ARAB(ic text).

LXX (Septuagint): LXX^A = LXX, codex A(lexandrinus).

HEX(apla): A' (Aquila) — Θ' (Theodotion) — O' (Origenes' LXX) —
Σ' (Symmachus) — Ε' (πέμπτη) — Ἄλλος.

GR(eek New Testament); but A^{gr} = Greek New Testament, codex A(lexandrinus). The index 'gr' is omitted in the case of **Σ**.

The two main groups of Greek MSS are referred to as unc(iales) and min(usculi) respectively.

SYR(iac version); but sy^c (Curetonian text), sy^s (Sinaitic text), sy^{pal} (Palestinian or Hierosolymitan text), sy^p (Peshitto), sy^h (Harcleian text).

COPT(ic version).

VL (Vetus Latina, MSS only): VL(a) = VL, codex a (Vercellensis).

VetLat (Vetus Latina, MSS and Fathers).

PSALT(erium) = PsV + Gall or Heb.

TEST(imonia Patrum), if no names are given.

VULG(ate): VULG^A or VULG(A) = Vulgate, MS A(miatinus).

N.B.: "vg" in the Old Testament (including Gall) means Hetzenauer's text of the Vatican exemplar; in the New Testament, the consensus of Stephanica, Henteniana, Sixtina, Clementina (from Iac on, of Sixtina and Clementina).

Individual MSS of a text, or works of an ecclesiastical writer, are normally referred to in index form: Cypr^{LW} = Cyprian, MSS L and W; Aug^{Conf} = Augustine, Confessiones. The same applies to the following abbreviations:

al(ii), alq (aliquot), cett (ceteri), cod(ex), codd (codices), mell (meliores), mg (margo), mul(ti), om(nes), -om (fere omnes), pau(ci), pl(urimi); sem(el), bis, ter, saep(ius), semp(er).

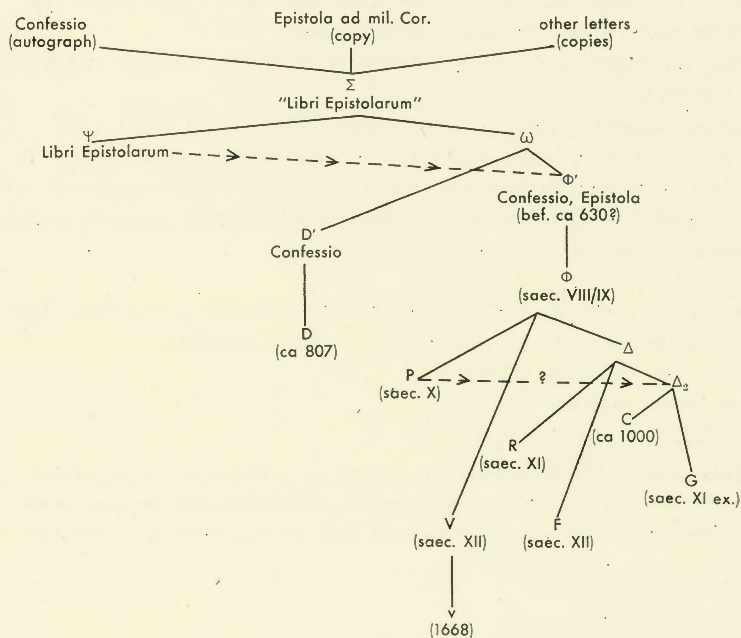
If such indexes refer to more than one symbol, this is expressed in algebraic form:

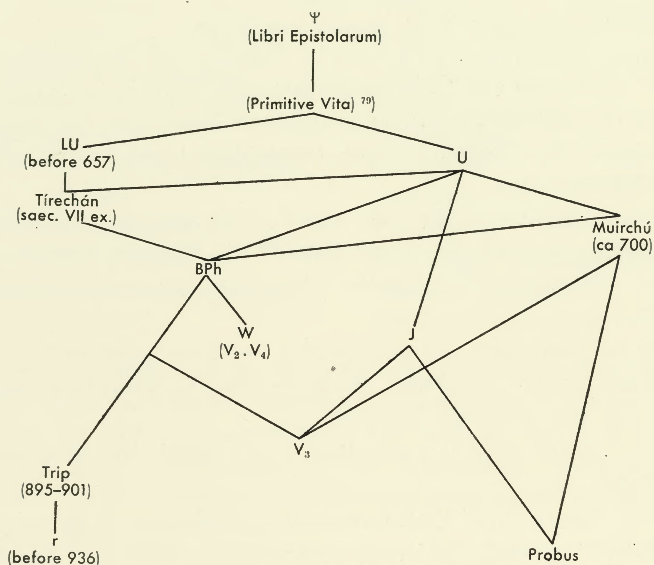
(CDE)^{gr} = Greek New Testament, MSS CDE

(VL.VULG)^{pl} = most Old Latin and Vulgate MSS.

Apart from this algebraic notation, bracketing of symbols indicates slight deviations from a given text.

Pedigree of Manuscripts



Pedigree of Ψ 

CONSPECTUS CODICUM

- D Dubliniensis, olim Ardmachanus, Coll. S. Trinitatis 52 (ca a. 807)
 P Parisinus, olim Compendiensis, Bibl. nat. Lat. 17626 (saec. X)
 V Vedastinus, nunc Atrebatensis 450 (saec. XII)
 v Danielis Papebroch editio (Antverpiae 1668), codicis instar ubi V
 mancus est
 R Rothomagensis, olim Gementicensis, Bibl. munic. 1391 (saec. XI)
 F Oxoniensis Bodleianus Fell 3, olim Sarisburiensis (saec. XII)
 C Musei Britannici Cottonianus Nero E. 1, olim Wigorniensis (ca a. 1000)
 G Oxoniensis Bodleianus Fell 4, olim Sarisburiensis (saec. XI/XII)
 G' codex G correctus

$\omega \omega$ consensus codicum DPV(R)FCG } ubi v tantum exstat, haec sigla un-
 $\Phi \phi$ consensus codicum PV(R)FCG } cinis inclusimus
 $\Delta \delta$ consensus codicum (R)FCG
 Δ_2 consensus codicum CG

⁷⁹) This hypothetical Primitive Vita, which, in my opinion, is postulated by the analysis of the Lives, has not been discussed in my Introduction, because, so far as the Libri Epistolarum are concerned, we know it only to the extent it is preserved in U.

- Ψ testimonium Vitarum S. Patricii. (Ubi de Ψ non constat, singulae Vitae aut codices adferuntur. Sigla Vitarum habes in Praefatione, p. 23 f.; sigla codicum in Appendice, p. 107)
- Σ archetypus

EDITORES ET EMENDATORES

- WARE, SIR JAMES: Sancto Patricio . . . adscripta opuscula, Londinii 1656 [PAPEBROCH, DANIEL]: Acta Sanctorum Martii II (Antverpiae 1668) 533—40
- HADDAN, A. W., and STUBBS, W.: Councils and Ecclesiastical Documents relating to Great Britain and Ireland II/2 (1878) 296—319
- GILBERT, J. T.: Facsimiles of the National MSS of Ireland 2 (1878), Appendix 3
- STOKES, WHITLEY: The Tripartite Life of Patrick (London 1887) 2, 357—80
- WHITE, NEWPORT J. D.: Libri S. Patricii (Proc R.I.A. 25, 1905, C 201—326)
- Libri S. Patricii (S.P.C.K. Texts for Students 4) London 1918. ("White²")
- USSHER, JAMES: Britannicarum Ecclesiarum Antiquitates (1639) 815—901
- BURY, JOHN B.: The Life of St. Patrick and his Place in History (1905)
- GWYNN, JOHN: Liber Ardmachanus. (1913), p. cclxxxix f.
- ESPOSITO, MARIO: Notes on the Latin writings of St. Patrick, in Journal of Theological Studies 19 (1918) 342—6
- HITCHCOCK, F. R. MONTGOMERY: Notes and emendations on the Latin writings of St. Patrick, in Hermathena 51 (1938) 65—76
- GROSJEAN, PAUL: in Analectis Bollandianis passim, et per litteras

COMPENDIA

a(n)te add(it, -unt) ap(ud) c(um) cf (confer) des(init) inc(ipit)
 ins(erit, -unt) l(inea) litt(era) m(ar)g(o) mut(ilus) p(agina, post)
 pr(aeter) ras(ura) s l (supra lineam) s s (supra scriptum) uar(ia)
 lect(io) u(ide) uid(etur)

Uncinis angularibus < > inserenda indicantur, quadratis [] delenda.

LIBRI EPISTOLARUM SANCTI PATRICII EPISCOPI.
LIBER PRIMUS: CONFESSIO.

N. White

235,2

1. Ego Patricius peccator rusticissimus et minimus omnium
fidelium et contemptibilissimus apud plurimos
patrem habui Calpornium diaconum filium quendam Potiti pres-
byteri, qui fuit uico †bannaue[m] taburnia[e]†; uillulam enim prope
habuit, ubi ego capturam dedi.
Annorum eram tunc fere sedecim. Deum enim uerum ignorabam et
Hiberione in captiuitate adductus sum cum tot milia hominum —

4—5 MUIR I. 1 (494,7; cf. Codices Patriciani Latini 54; Proc R. I. A. 52 C 5, p 185)
Calfurnio (N: Cualfarni B) diacono (-i B) ortus, filio, ut ipse ait, Potiti presbyteri;
cf IOCEL. 1 et GUILFELMUM MALMESBURIENSEM De uita s. Patricii, lib I (LELANDI
Collectanea II. 236). 5—6 MUIR^B I. 1 (494,8; Prob I. 1) qui fuit uico bannaue[m]
thaburnia[e]; cf in campo Taburnia[e] W (V_{2.4.} c. 1), in pago Taburnia uocabulo IOCEL. 1,
sed Banauen uicus in Tabernia[e] campo GUILFELMUS MALMESBURIENSIS l c; Banauona
... uiculus littoralis campi Tabernarii LELANDUS IV. 30.

Ω Incipiunt libri s̄ci patricij epis̄ D. Libri (liber) epistolarum uel episcopi saepius
laudantur in Ψ. Incipit uita Beati patricij V. INCIPIT CONFESIO S̄CI PA-
TRICI EPISCOPI Q. ÷. XVI.KL- APL- F. INCIPIT CONFESSIO S̄CI PATRI-
CII EPISCOPI <XVI.KL- APRILI G> Δ₂. Inscriptio deest in PR. 3 con-
temptibilissimus: contemptibilis sum D. 4 calpornum D. calpurnium RF. Calpur-
nius, Calphurnius, Calfurnius, Kalfurnius Ψ; cf *specimina uariae scripturae* in ThLL
Onom. II. 101,32 sqq. diaconem VΔ. decurionem (cf 256,12) MACNEILL. quen-
dam: quondam (condam P) Φ. quondam filium R. fortasse legendum: quidem.
presbyteri] filii odissi in *mg adscr* D. 5 uico: in uico Δ₂. banaue[m] (-ba nauem
R) Φ. taburnia[e] P. thaburnia[e] MUIR: tabernia[e] (-e, -e) DVΔ. uico Gobanni
Ventae Burrinae uel Sabrinae MACNEILL Proc. R.I.A. 37 C 124. uico Bannauenta
Bruuia T. F. O'RAHILLY The Two Patricks 31—34. Clannauenta Berniciae
P. GROSJEAN AB 63, 65—72. an scribendum: Bannauen<ta> Taburnia[e]? uillu-
lam: uillam V. 6 ubi — 11 admonebant adest Ψ. 6 dedi: didici V. 7 xui
DP. quindecim R. enim om D. 8 hyberione V. hiberione G. de Ψ non constat.
adductus sum in captiuitate Ψ. milia: milibus G'. Ψ. Usserius.

secundum merita nostra, quia a Deo recessimus et praecepta eius non
 10 custodiimus et sacerdotibus nostris non oboedientes fuimus, qui
 <nos> nostram salutem admonebant: et Dominus induxit super nos
 iram

animationis suae et dispersit nos in gentibus multis etiam usque ad
 ultimum terrae, ubi nunc paruitas mea esse uidetur inter alienigenas,
 2 2. et ibi Dominus aperuit sensum incredulitatis meae, ut uel
 15 sero rememorarem delicta mea et ut conuerterem toto corde ad
 Dominum Deum meum, qui respexit humilitatem meam et misertus est

ad 235,16—236,2 uidentur spectare ea quae de Guilelmi Malmesburiensis Vita s. Patricii testatur Lelandus, Collectanea II. 236: In Banauen igitur uico, qui et Nenchor (s s Nantchor), educatus sanctiss(im)a?, ut par erat, disciplina et in ephebum aeuo crescente prouectus religioni parentum non defuit. Assistit ipse sermoni meo astipulator idoneus his uerbis in Confessione sua. Verba Patricii Lelandus non exscripsit; sed cf Trip(r) 101—9.

ω 10 custodiimus V. non oboedientes DΨ: inobedientes Φ. 11 nos inserui; cf 246,7. amonebant V. induxit: indixit P. iram — 12 nos om C. 12 animationis: indignationis V. usque om R. 13 uidetur esse Φ. alienigenas (-nienas F)
 Σ Φ: alenigenas D. 14 et ibi — 16 meum et 16 et misertus — 236,2 filium adest Ψ. 14 ibi: ubi Φ. apperuit F. apparuit P. sensus Δ. incredulitatis meae: cordis mei (meę G') incredulitatis Φ. ut om PV. uel om D. 15 sero rememorarem: serorem (z s s et in mg) orarem D. dilicta D. et om D. conuerterem PVΨ(?). conuerterer Δ: confirmarem D. fortasse: et confirmarem ut conuerterer. 16 deum om Φ. missertus D. est om PVRF.

9 cf Is 59,13 recessimus a do nostro Hier^{LXX}: auersi sumus ne iremus post tergum di nostri VULG cum HEB. LXX; cf Deut 32,15. 9—10 Gen 26,5 et custodiuit (Aug^{Ciu Dei} 16,36 Philat [ἐφύλαξεν LXX]: custodierit VULG) praecepta <mea A> et mandata mea (et seruauit praecepta mea et iustitias meas Aug^{saep}); similia passim. 11—12 Is 42,25 et superdixit super eos iram animationis suae Cypr (cf Apoc 14,19.20 [Vict-Hier^{YX}] misit in torcular irae animationis di). et induxit super eos iram furoris sui Hier^{LXX}. (induxit etiam m): et effudit super eum indignationem furoris sui crypt VULG. ad iram indignationis suae V (pro ὀργὴν θυμοῦ αὐτοῦ) cf ARAB et Ps 77,49; 2 Par 29,10 (LXX). 12 Ier 9,16 et dispergam eos in gentibus. Tob 13,4 dispersit uos inter gentes (in illis Monac Regin Sangerm). 12—13 usque ad ultimum terrae (Act 13,47) u Conf 38; cf Conf 11; Epist 6. 14 cf Luc 24,45 tunc aperuit illis sensum (sensum illorum a. adaperuit eorum sensum Iren. aperti sunt eorum sensus d. αὐτῶν τὸν νοῦν GR); Bar 1,22 in sensum cordis nostri maligni (Ier 4,19 sensus cordis nostri); Heb 3,12 ne forte sit in aliquo uestrum cor malum incredulitatis (iniquitatis d e); cf Act 16,14 cuius dns aperuit cor (sensus gig). 15—16 conuerterem — meum (Ioel 2,12.13) u Conf 19 (241,1—2). 16 Luc 1,48 respexit humilitatem meam r₁, ut uid. (anicillae suae VL^{—om}. VULG).

- adolescentiae et ignorantiae meae et custodiuit me antequam
 236,1 scirem eum et antequam saperem uel distinguerem inter bonum et
 malum et muniuit me et consolatus est me ut pater filium.
 3 3. Vnde autem tacere non possum, *neque expedit quidem*, tanta
 beneficia et tantam gratiam quam mihi Dominus praestare dignatus
 5 est in terra captiuitatis meae; quia haec est retributio nostra, ut post
 correptionem uel agnitionem Dei *exaltare et confiteri mirabilia eius*
 coram omni natione quae est sub omni caelo.
 4 4. Quia non est alius Deus nec umquam fuit nec ante nec erit
 post haec praeter Deum Patrem ingentum, sine principio, a quo est
 10 omne principium, omnia tenentem, ut didicimus; et huius filium

8—22 cf F. R. MONTGOMERY HITCHCOCK The Creeds of SS. Irenaeus and Patrick, in: HERMATHENA 14 (1907) 168—82; J. E. L. OULTON The Credal Statements of St. Patrick (1940); L. BIELER The "Creeds" of St. Victorinus and St. Patrick, in: THEOL. STUDIES 9 (WOODSTOCK Md, 1948), 121—4. 9—12 VICTORINUS PETAUION. in Apoc. 11,1: patrem confiteri omnipotentem ut didicimus (dicimus, *omisso* ut, *Hier*) et huius filium Iesum (*om Hier*) Christum ante originem saeculi spiritaliter (spiritalementem *Hier c Victorino*^a) apud patrem genitum.

- 17 adoliscientiae ignorantiae meae D. (adolescintie) r. V₄. adolescentie et ignorantie mee V. V₂. adolescentie meae P. adulescentie (adolescentie R) mee et ignorantie (-e FG) Δ. custodit P. 1 distinguerem C. 2 muniuit: monuit Φ. et (2) om P. consulatus D. consolatus — 3 tacere: consolatacere P. me (2): D.r, quibus fortasse
 (U) fides habenda est. 3 autem: ego quidem V. quidem om V. 4 quam: que R. dominus praestare om D. 5 est (1) om D. nostra: mea nā D. 6 correptionem: correctionem G'. correctionem nram R. agnitionem V. exaltare et confiteri: exaltaremus (-ur VΔ) et confiteremur Φ. 7 coram — est R mut. est — caelo: sub celo est V. omni (2) om V R. 8 quia — alius: non enim alius est V. nec ante nec erit: nec ante erit P. nec erit (nec sequente spatio R) Δ. 9 haec D: hunc Φ. praeter: p (cetera mut) R. 10 omnia — 13 principium deest V; quae leguntur in v, DP Δ coniecturae debentur. tenentem: tenens F. didicimus cum Victorino scripsi: dicimus DPΔ₂. diximus RF. huius: eius D.
-

3 2 Cor 12,1 non expedit quidem c f m r t VULG^{pr} D: non expedit mihi de Ambr Sed D (DEKL al)^{gr} (mihi quidem g 0*). 5 in terra captiuitatis meae: 2 Par 6,37; Tob 13,7 et passim; cf Conf 33 (245,8). 6 Is 25,1 exaltabo te et (om crypt Hier^{HEB} cum HEB. LXX) confitebor nomini tuo crypt Hier^{HEB}. VULG: glorificabo te, laudabo nomen tuum Hier^{LXX}. Ps 88,6 confitebuntur caeli mirabilia tua dne. 7 Act 2,5 ex omni natione quae est sub caelo Aug^{saep}. Sacrgelas 156 Wilson. D: ex omni natione quae sub caelo est c p VULG^{pl}; dissentiunt VetLat^{cett}. VULG^{alq}, sub omni caelo Dan 9,12.

Iesum Christum, quem cum Patre scilicet semper fuisse testamur, ante originem saeculi spiritaliter apud Patrem <et> inenarrabiliter genitum ante omne principium, et per ipsum facta sunt uisibilia et inuisibilia, hominem factum, morte deuicta in caelis ad Patrem
 15 receptum, et dedit illi omnem potestatem super omne nomen caelestium et terrestrium et infernorum et omnis lingua confiteatur ei quia Dominus et Deus est Iesus Christus, quem credimus et expectamus aduentum ipsius mox futurum, iudex uiuorum atque mortuorum, qui reddet unicuique secundum facta sua; et effudit in nobis

12—14 cf *Symbolum Auxentii* (HILARIUS Liber contra Auxentium 14, PL 10,617) ante omne principium natum ex patre . . . per ipsum (i e Iesum Christum) enim omnia facta sunt, uisibilia et inuisibilia. 14—15 VICTORINUS 11: hominem factum et morte deuicta in caelis cum corpore a patre receptum. 19 cf *Symbolum Sirmiense* (HILARIUS De synodis 38, PL 10,509): reddere unicuique secundum opera sua. 19—20 VICTORINUS(-*Hieronymus* 11: effudisse spiritum sanctum donum et pignus immortalita-

11 quem: qui D. semper — testamur: fuisse semper testamur P. (testamur semper R) Δ. 12 originem C. spiritaliter G. et inserui. inerrabiliter D.
 ω gemitum P. 13 omnem P. et (1) om Φ. quippe p ipsum ins V. omnia p sunt ins V. uisibilia D. 13—14 et inuisibilia om D. 14 homo factus F. deuicta (-o P) morte Φ. ad — 15 receptum om D, receptum ad patrem R. ad patrem: a patre P. 15 receptus F. super omne: superne P. 16 et (1) om PV. et terrestrium om R. et (3): ut PVRΔ₂. ei om Φ. 17 deus et dominus R. dominus — christus: dñs iñc xpc in glā ē dei patris V. exēpectamus D. ex|spectamus F. 18 ipsius om D. futurum: futurus G'; p iudex in mg add R. iudex: iudicem V. 19 reddit P. facta: opera R. effudit: infudit Φ. nobis: uobis D.

15—17 Phil 2,10—11 et dedit (*Aug Vig Nou Ambr Hier Cassd* [ἐδωκε Clem]: donauit VL.VULG) illi nomen <quod est m Aug Hil MissRom ADFV vg> super omne nomen, ut in nomine ihu omne genu flectatur caelestium <et (cum GR, d e g m^S Iren^u ABCD pl: om c dem diu f g gig m² t TEST—om F Θ KLMPRWZ* vg> terrestrium et infernorum (et infernorum om Iren) et omnis lingua confiteatur <ei Iren> quia (quoniam d m) dñs ihs xps in gloria est di patris. Cf Matth 28,18 data est mihi omnis potestas in caelo et in terra VetLat^{pl}.VULG; Eph 1,21 supra omnem . . . potestatem . . . et omne nomen; Ioh 20,28 dñs meus et ds meus. 18 Act 10,42 iudex uiuorum et mortuorum. 19 Rom 2,6 qui reddet unicuique secundum facta (*VicTun ap Ambr IV appendix, 760*: opera VetLat^{cett}.VULG) sua (g Orig Cypr Aug Ambrst Hier Sed Faust Gild DΘ: eius cde VULG^{cett}). In Matth 16,27, unde apostolus hausit, legitur facta ff₁. factum e (opus uel opera VetLat^{cett}.VULG); sua d r₂ Faust (opus suum g₂ δ μ: eius uel eorum VL^{cett}.VULG). 19—20 Tit 3,5—6 per lauacrum . . . sps sci (per spm scm d e g Lucif Ambrst cum [D*E*FG]^{gr}) quem effudit in nobis (*Iren Lucif Cassd*

20 *habunde Spiritum Sanctum, donum et pignus immortalitatis, qui facit credentes et oboedientes ut sint filii Dei et coheredes Christi: quem confitemur et adoramus unum Deum in trinitate sacri nominis.*

5 5. Ipse enim dixit per prophetam: *Inuoca me in die tribulationis tuae et liberabo te et magnificabis me.* Et iterum inquit: *Opera autem*

25 *Dei reuelare et confiteri honorificum est.*

237,1 6 6. Tamen etsi in multis imperfectus sum opto *fratribus et cognatis* meis scire qualitatem meam, ut possint perspicere uotum animae meae.

7 7. Non ignoro *testimonium Domini mei*, qui in psalmo testatur:

5 *Perdes eos qui loquuntur mendacium.* Et iterum inquit: *Os quod mentitur occidit animam.* Et idem Dominus in euangelio inquit:

tis (*ubi Victorinus nihil habet praeter sanctum dominum et pignus immortalitatis, quippe qui de Filio loquatur*). 22 SECUNDINUS 87: quam legem in trinitate sacri credit nominis; cf PsAUGUSTINUS Sermo 233,1 (PL 39,2175) hanc unam esse diuini nominis trinitatem.

20 abunde PΔ. spiritus sancti VΔ. immortalitatis V. 21 patris p dei ins Φ. et coheredes Christi om V. 22 adoremus P. unum deum adoramus V. sacri: sacrosancti V. 23 profetam D. 25 honorificam R. 1 fratribus — 2 meis: fratres et cognatos meos Δ. cognatis: cognotatis D. 2 et a ut ins Φ. perspicere: perficere D. R mut. 4 enim p non ins V. psalmo D. psal (cet mut) R. testatur: ditatur P. 5 eos: omnes VR. om C. loquuntur PRFC. loquuntur DV. et iterum inquit om P. inquit om VΔ. quod: quos^d (s eras) F. qui R. 6 idem: isdem Δ₂. in euangelio inquit om D. inquit om R.

F^cGPR: in nos [VetLat.VULG]^{ceff}) abunde; uerba in nobis desunt in utraque recensione Victorini. 20 Act 2,38 donum sci sps. Eph 1,14 (sps) qui est pignus hereditatis nostrae.

21 Rom 8,16—17 quod sumus filii di ... heredes quidem di, coheredes autem xpi. Cf Conf 59(252,20). 23—24 Ps 49,15 καὶ ἐπικάλεσάι με ἐν ἡμέρᾳ θλίψεως <σου N^{c-a}. ART> καὶ ἐξελοῦμαι σε καὶ δοξάσεις με LXX. inuoca me in die tribulationis (pressurae Cypr PsMax; cf Conf. 20 [241,22]) tuae (om Cypr PsMax) et eripiam (eximam Cypr Aug R) te et magnificabis (glorificabis Aug R PsMax Moz^{pl}. clarificabis Cypr) me PsV^{pl}: inuoca me in die tribulationis <et CUW al> eruam te et honorificabis me Gall. et inuoca me in die tribulationis: liberabo te et glorificabis me Heb. 24—25 Tob 12,7 opera autem di reuelare <et confiteri, cum N, VL (Par. lat. 93. Sangerm 4. Monac Clm 6239). VULG: om Aug cum LXX^{unc} cet> honorificum est. 1 Luc 21,16 trademini autem a (om r₂) parentibus et fratribus et cognatis et amicis VL(pr a i s δ). VULG. 4 2 Tim 1,8 testimonium dni mei. 5 Ps 5,7 perdes eos (omnes, cum LXX, Aug^{saep} Mops Cass^{bis} Gall. om Heb) qui loquuntur (loquentes Heb) mendacium. 5—6 Sap 1,11 os autem (enim Aug^{saep}. om MS s Theoderici [Sab] Leo^{serm} 38) quod mentitur occidit animam m^{bis} Aug Cass VULG.

Verbum otiosum quod locuti fuerint homines reddent pro eo rationem in die iudicii.

- 8 8. Vnde autem uehementer debueram *cum timore et tremore*
 10 metuere hanc sententiam in die illa ubi nemo se poterit subtrahere
 uel abscondere, sed omnes omnino *reddituri sumus rationem* etiam
 minimorum peccatorum *ante tribunal Domini Christi*.
 9 9. Quapropter olim cogitavi scribere, sed et usque nunc haesitavi;
 timui enim ne *incederem in linguam* hominum, quia non didici
 15 sicut et ceteri, qui optime itaque iura et sacras litteras utraque
 pari modo combiberunt et sermones illorum ex infantia numquam
 mutarunt, sed magis ad perfectum semper addiderunt. Nam *sermo*
et loquela nostra translata est in linguam alienam, sicut facile potest
 probari ex salua scripturae meae qualiter sum ego in sermonibus

7 omne a uerbum *ins* R. otiossum D. oti'um (*in mg* osu) R. om P. loquuti V.
 pro eo rationem: de eo rationem R. rationem de eo D. 9 autem — debueram: ego
 deberem uehementer V. uehementer D. debueram om D. 10 hanc sententiam:
 hanc sentiam P. poterit se Φ. subtrahere P. 12 minimum P. Domini
 Christi: dñi nrī ihū xpī V. xpī domini PΔ. 13 ollim D. et om Φ. haesitavi D.
 14 inciderem R. in om Φ. lingua P. dedici D: legi Φ. 15 et (1) om Φ.
 obtime P. itaque — 16 combiberunt: sacris litteris imbuti sunt V. iura J.
 GWYNN: iure ō. litteras D. utraque: utroque (*in mg* z incertus liber hic) D.
 16 cumbiberunt P. (*corr in comb-* G) Δ. sermonem PΔ. sermones illorum: stu-
 dium suum V. 17 motarunt D. mutauerunt VΔ. 18 loquela: lingua V. lingua
 aliena P. sicut: sed V. 19 probare PV. ex salua: exaliue DP. ex saluē V.
 ego sum V.

7—8 Matth 12,36 omne uerbum otiosum (uacuum [d] k *Cypr.* uanum, superua-
 cuum *Tert*) quod locuti fuerint homines, reddent pro eo rationem (*d g₁ k μ Iren*
Cypr E: rationem pro eo JLQ, cf *sy^h*. eius rationem *b q sy^p*. de eo rationem, *cum*
GR^p L, a f ff_{1.2} g₂ h δ gat R, cf *sy^c. pal.*. rationem de eo, *cum L^{gr}*, c l *Aug^{Spec}*. *VULG*
 [AD pl]) in die iudicii. 8 cum timore et tremore Eph 6,5; Phil 2,12 (*d e g Ambrst Aug*
DW: metu *pro* timore cf *VULG^{ceff}*. cum metu et timore *gig. μετὰ φόβου καὶ*
τρόμου utroque loco GR); cf Tob 13,6. 11 Rom 14,12 unusquisque nostrum pro
 se rationem reddet do, nisi alluditur ad Matth 12,36, cf Conf 7 (237,6—8). 12
 Rom 14,10 omnes enim stabimus ante tribunal di (dñi *Aug^{sem}* U. xpi *dem gue r W vg*
cum [N^cC²LP al]^{gr}. 2 Cor 5,10 ante tribunal xpi (xpi ihu *Tert.* di *Faust^{bis} Cassd*).
 14 Eccli 28,27 qui relinquunt dm incident (-unt *Sangerm 15*) in illam (*i e* linguam
 nequam). 17—18 Ioh 8,43 quare loquellam meam non cognoscitis? quia non potes-
 tis audire sermonem (uerbum a b d q r₁) meum *VLP^l. VULG*. Cf Ps 18,4 non sunt
 loquelaē neque sermones (uerba M) *PsVP^l. Gall c LXX*: non est sermo et non sunt
 uerba *Heb c HEXA⁴*.

20 instructus atque eruditus, quia, inquit, *sapiens per linguam dinoscetur et sensus et scientia et doctrina ueritatis*.

10 10. Sed quid prodest excusatio *iuxta ueritatem*, praesertim cum praesumptione, quatenus modo ipse adpeto in senectute mea quod in iuuentute non comparaui? quod obstiterunt peccata mea ut
25 confirmarem quod ante perlegeram. Sed quis me credit etsi dixero quod ante praefatus sum?

238,1 Adolescens, immo paene puer inuerbis, capturam dedi, antequam scirem quid adpetere uel quid uitare debueram.

Vnde ergo hodie erubesco et uehementer pertimeo denudare imperitiam meam, quia desertis breuitate sermone explicare nequeo,

5 sicut enim spiritus gestit et animus, et sensus monstrat adfectus.

11 11. Sed si itaque datum mihi fuisset sicut et ceteris, uerumtamen non silerem *propter retributionem*, et si forte uidetur apud

26 Cf p 235,6 sqq. 238,2 SYNODUS CARTHAG. a. 418, can. 5: ut sciamus quid appetere, quid uitare debeamus (D. S. NERNEY I. E. R. 72,23).

20 quia, inquit, sapiens *distinxi*. 21 dinoscetur (γνωσθήσεται LXX) D: dinoscitur Φ. et (1) om V. sensus V. ueritatis: uarietatis PΔ. cf *apparatum criticum* ad TERTULL. De praescr. haeret. 36 p 35,3 Oehler. 22 quid om Φ. excussatio D. 23 presumptione P. quatinus DFA₂. (ut V.) appeto VΔ₂. mea — 24 iuuentute om C. 24 quod: quia PΔ. quod obstiterunt: obstiterunt enim V. peccata mea om D. 25 confirmarem: confiterem P. quod: quodque Φ. non p ante ins Φ. perlegeram: legeram R. si p sed ins D. me: m R e corr.. credit D. 26 quod: qui P. 238,1 adolescens VRG'. adoliscens D. adulescens P. aduliscens Δ₂. adhuliscens F. inuerbis D. in uerbis Φ. imberbis WARE. dedi: didici V. 2 adpetere ex canonibus restitui: <peterem uel quid D> ad(ap-V)peterem ω. uitare: inuitare R. 3 et — denud-R mut. uehementer D. pertimeo: protimeo D. ualde pertimesco in ras, ut uid, V. palam (in ras, ut uid) a denudare ins V. 4 desertis PFC. n̄ pōssūm dē deeritis (z in mg) D: disertis VRG. (non disertus STOKES.) breuitate: -tate deest in R. sermonis VG'. sermone <m> WHITE. diserti breuitate sermonis PAPEBROCH. explicare R mut. 5 gestit: gestat P. gessit Δ. animus: animas D. monstrare F. et a adfectus ins V. affectus VFΔ₂. effectus R. 6 michi datum V. et om RG. ueruntamen PG. uerumptamen F. 7 uidetur (uideatur R) mihi suspectum; nescio an legendum uidear.

20—21 Eccli 4,29 ἐν γὰρ λόγῳ γνωσθήσεται σοφία καὶ παιδεία ἐν ῥήματι γλώσσης LXX, cf SYR. in lingua enim agnoscitur (*Sangerm 15. A: cognoscitur m. dignoscitur vg*) sapientia (sapientia dignoscitur *vg*) et sensus et scientia et doctrina (et doctrina: doctrinae m) in uerbis ueritatis (in uerbo sensati *vg*). 22 Act 22,3 iuxta ueritatem (secundum diligentiam *gig. certissime e*). 7 Ps 118,112 propter retributionem (*cum LXX*) Ps V. Gall: propter aeternam retributionem (*cum HEXZ'*) Heb Moz².

aliquantos me in hoc praeponere cum mea inscientia et *tardiori lingua*, sed etiam scriptum est enim: *Linguae balbutientes uelociter discent loqui pacem*.

- 10 Quanto magis nos adpetere debemus, qui sumus, inquit, *epistola Christi in salutem usque ad ultimum terrae*, et si non deserta, sed †ratum et fortissimum† *scripta in cordibus uestris non atramento sed spiritu Dei uiui*. Et iterum Spiritus testatur *et rusticationem ab Altissimo creatam*.

- 12 15 12. Vnde ego primus rusticus profuga indoctus scilicet, *qui nescio in posterum prouidere*, sed illud scio certissime quia utique *priusquam humiliarer* ego eram uelut lapis qui iacet in *luto profundo*: et uenit *qui potens est* et in sua misericordia sustulit me et quidem

8 proponere P. inscitia C. lingue (-e V) Φ. (-a G'). 9 etiam om D. enim om DR. (s s) F. sed etiam (scriptum est enim) linguae *haud improbabili-ter distinguit* P. GROSJEAN. et p linguae *ins* F, *sed eras*. balbutientis RF*. loqui discent V. 10 appetere V. inquit: nos D. 11 in salutem om V. 12 ratum fortissimum scriptum (z in mg) D. ratum (raptum R. rata G) et fortissimum (-e G') scripta (a et sequens in in ras, ut uid, V) Φ. <minist>rata fortissime WHITE². uestris D. ex coniectura, ut uid., PAPEBROCH: nostris Φ. sed sed V. rusticationem (z in mg) D P: rusticatio VRF. rusticitatio Δ₂. creatam *scripsi*: creata est Ω. 13 et (1) — 14 est: Et rusticatio ab altissimo creata est. — teste eodem spū dei uiui V. 15 ego: ergo PRFC. primus *mihi suspectum*. rusticus PΔ₂. profuga: perfuga Φ. inductus D. 16 imposterum V. prouidere: prēuidere V. scio (om V) illud Φ. 17 uelud P. 18 ueniens *corr in -it* D. missericordia D.

8 Ex 4,10 tardiore lingua sum ego *Lugd Aug Ambr*: tardioris linguae sum *VULG*. (βραδύγλωσσος ἐγὼ εἰμι LXX.) 9 Is 32,4 αἱ γλῶσσαι αἱ ψελλίζουσαι ταχὺ μαθήσονται λαλεῖν εἰρήνην LXX, cf *HEX^O*. linguae balbutientium cito discent loqui pacem *Hier^{LXX}*: et lingua balborum uelociter loquetur et plane t. *VULG cum HEB*, cf *HEX^{Σ'}*. 10—13 2 Cor 3,2—3 epistula nostra uos estis, scripta (inscripta, cum GR, d e g Sed D) in cordibus nostris (uestris Conf^D cum GR[~~Nal~~]) quae scitur et legitur ab omnibus hominibus: manifestati quoniam estis epistula (g *Iren*: epistula estis *VetLat^{cett}*. *VULG*) xpi, ministrata a nobis et scripta (et scripta cf *VULG cum gr Athos Laura* 184 [vSoden: α 78] solo: inscripta, cum GR^{prBK}. 67.74.α 78, d e g *Iren TEST^{al}*) non atramento (littera vg), sed spu di uiui. in salutem usque ad ultimum terrae (Act 13,47) u Conf 38; cf Conf 1; Epist 6. 13—14 Eccli 7,16 non oderis laboriosa opera et rusticationem ab altissimo creatam (A: creatam ab altissimo vg) *VULG cum LXX*. 15 sq. Eccle 4,13 qui nescit prouidere (*Hier*: praeuidere *VULG*) in posterum. 17 Ps 118,67 priusquam humiliarer ego deliqui (cum LXX) *Ps VPl^l*. *Gall*: antequam audirem ego ignorauī *Heb*, cf *HEX^{Σ'}*. Ps 68,15 eripe me de luto ... et de profundo (*Ps V^{om} cum LXX*: profundis *C Gall Heb*) aquarum. 18 Luc 1,49 fecit mihi magna qui potens est (ille potens e, cf GR ὁ δυνατός) *VetLat^{om}*. *VULG*.

- scilicet sursum adleuauit et collocauit me in summo pariete;
 20 et inde fortiter debueram exclamare ad retribuendum quoque
 aliquid Domino pro tantis beneficiis eius hic et in aeternum, quae
 mens hominum aestimare non potest.
- 13 13. Vnde autem ammiramini itaque *magni et pusilli qui timetis Deum*
 et uos dominicati rethorici audite et scrutamini. Quis me stultum
 25 excitauit de medio eorum qui uidentur esse sapientes et legis periti
 et *potentes in sermone* et in omni re, et me quidem, detestabilis
 239,1 huius mundi, prae ceteris inspirauit si talis essem — dummodo autem —
 ut *cum metu et reuerentia et sine querella* fideliter prodessem genti ad
 quam *caritas Christi* transtulit et donauit me in uita mea, si dignus
 fuero, denique ut cum humilitate et ueraciter deseruirem illis.
- 14 5 14. In mensura itaque fidei Trinitatis oportet distinguere, sine re-
 prehensione periculi notum facere *donum Dei* et consolationem
 aeternam,
 sine timore fiducialiter Dei nomen ubique expandere, ut etiam *post*

19 sursum: rursum P. alleuauit R. summo pariete: sua parte D. 20 for-
 titer: forte V. retribuendam (-ūm P. -ū ex a, ut uid., G) Ω. quoque
 deest R. 21—22 quae mens R *mut.* 22 hominum: humana V. extimare V.
 estimare Δ. 23 admiramini PΔ. itaque om D. itaque magni R *mut.* qui timetis
 deum p 24 dominicati D; *sed uoci q e rethorici praefixum est signum quod uerbis colum-*
nam excrescentibus, cum ad uersum superiorem relegantur, praefigi solet. 24 domini-
 cati: domni (domini VR) ignari (gnari P) Φ. rethorici: nethorici Δ₂. ergo p
 audite ins Φ. scrutamini F. quis: qui R. 25 sapientes esse PVFΔ₂. legis:
 leges D. 26 et (3): in P. detestabilem Φ. 239,1 prae: de (in *mg* corr in p̄) D.
 2 reuerantia D. querela VΔ. prodessem om D. 3 et: ut Δ (et ex ut, ut uid.,
 G'). dignus: uiuus (corr in *mg*) D. 4 humilitate ex -tae, ut uid., F. 5 men-
 suram P. fidi C. trinitatis: dignitatis (ex -tes) P. oportet F. 6 con-
 solationem D. 7 nomen: nomine P. nomen nomine (nomōne F) FΔ₂. uibiq: C.

23 Apoc 19,5 qui timetis dm (l *Prim*(*vg Paris, 1544*): eum *gig t Prim*^{codd} *Beat VULG*)
 magni et pusilli (*Prim*: pusilli et magni *VL Beat VULG*). 26 Luc 24,19 potens in
 opere et sermone *VL^{pl} VULG* (uerbo a *d r gat.* dictis *c e Aug.*) 239,2 cum metu et
 reuerentia Heb 12,28. sine querella: 1 Thess 2,10; 3,13; 5,23. 3 2 Cor 5,14
 caritas enim xpi urget nos; cf Conf 33 (245,12). 5 mensuram fidei Rom 12,3;
 cf 12,6 (*Hier Eucherius*: rationem *VULG*). 6 Ioh. 4,10 donum (munus a) di. Cf
 Conf 33.62. 2 Thess 2,16 consolationem (*c f g VULG*: exhortationem *d e. GR* πρ-
 οκαλησιν) aeternam. 7—8 2 Petr 1,15 post obitum meum (l *z VULG*: post mor-
 tem meam *h*).

obitum meum exaga<e>llias relinquere fratribus et filiis meis quos in Domino ego baptizaui tot milia hominum —

15 10 (15) et non eram dignus neque talis ut hoc Dominus seruulo suo concederet, post aerumnas et tantas moles, post captiuitatem, post annos multos in gentem illam tantam gratiam mihi donaret; quod ego aliquando in iuuentute mea numquam speraui neque cogitaui.

16 16. Sed postquam Hiberione deueneram — cotidie itaque pecora
15 pascebam et frequens in die orabam — magis ac magis accedebat amor Dei et timor ipsius et fides augebatur et spiritus agebatur, ut in die una usque ad centum orationes et in nocte prope similiter, ut etiam in siluis et monte manebam, et ante lucem excitabar ad orationem per niuem per gelu per pluuiam, et nihil mali sentiebam
20 neque ulla pigritia erat in me — sicut modo uideo, quia tunc spiritus in me feruebat —

17 (17) et ibi scilicet quadam nocte in somno audiui uocem dicentem mihi: 'Bene ieiunas cito iturus ad patriam tuam', et iterum post paululum tempus audiui *responsum* dicentem mihi:

8 exaga<e>llias *dubitanter restitui*: ex||agallias (*in mg z et incertus liber*) D. exgallias VFC. ex gallicis *e corr* G. gallias R. exgaleas P. *pro exangelias accipiunt* E. HOGAN, F. R. M. HITCHCOCK. ex<tr>a Gallias GILBERT. 8—9 in dño ego baptizaui D. ego in domino baptizaui PVRFC. ego baptizaui in domino G. 10 eram: etiam Δ. 11 erumpnas D. erumpnas V. erumnas PFΔ₂. erunnas R. tantas moles: ante moles P. tante molis VΔ. 12 multos: inultos, *ut uid*, D. illam: magnam R. quod: quo P. 12—13 aliquando ego V. 13 mea *om* P. numquam speraui: non quia desperaui (disp- P) Φ. 14 hýberione V. hiberionem R. hyberionem V₂. quod Σ *a* cotidie *ins* P. 239,14—243,3 illorum *paucis omissis adest* Ψ. itaque: igitur Φ. V₂. 15 frequent G'. (frequenter V₂J.) magis (1): magisq; V. acedebat F. 16 timor dei et timor illius (illis F) Φ, cf J MUIR. augebatur: agebatur P. agebatur: augebatur PF. fides et spiritus augebatur Ψ. 18 ut: et V. ut et R. *om* P. in *a* monte *ins* Φ. Ψ (*var. lect.*) monte: mente (*corr in monte* RΔ₂) Δ. et (2) *om* D exercitabar PΔ. 19 per pluuiam per gelu R. pluuiam D. mali sentiebam: male sciebam P. mali (*om sentiebam*) V. 20—21 in me spiritus VΔ. 22 et ibi scilicet *desunt in* Ψ. quadam: quidam C. 23 sibi (*del*) mihi D. iturus: ieiunans (*del*) iturus D. 23—24 et iterum: et terram et (et [2] R *mut*) Φ. 24 post — tempus R *mut*. *responsum* audiui V. dicente R. dicens G'. 25 -ata — prope R *mut*. non *om* φ.

24 Rom 11,4 sed quid dicit illi responsum diuinum (*om Tyc^{reg} 3*). Cf Conf 21.29.35.

25 'Ecce nauis tua parata est' — et non erat prope, sed forte habebat ducenta milia passus et ibi numquam fueram nec ibi notum quemquam de hominibus habebam — et deinde postmodum conuersus sum

240,1 in fugam et intermisi hominem cum quo fueram sex annis et ueni in uirtute Dei, qui uiam meam ad bonum dirigebat et nihil metuebam donec perueni ad nauem illam,

18 (18) et illa die qua perueni profecta est nauis de loco suo, et 5 locutus sum ut haberem unde nauigare cum illis et gubernator displicuit illi et acriter cum indignatione respondit: 'Nequaquam tu nobiscum adpetes ire',

et cum haec audiissem separavi me ab illis ut uenirem ad tegoriorium ubi hospitabam, et in itinere coepi orare et antequam

10 orationem consummare audiui unum ex illis et fortiter exclamabat post me: 'Veni cito, quia uocant te homines isti', et statim ad illos reuersus sum,

25 TÍRECHÁN 302,14 sq.; 330,19: ecce nauis tua parata est (ecce — parata est *om priore loco*), surge et ambula; cf BPh (Trip r [R fol 124vα41], V₂ c. 18, V₄ c. 21): propera, ecce nauis tua parata est.

26. cc. D. .cc.^{tos} P. passos P. fueram nec ibi R *mut.* notam C (*corr manus saec. XVII*). 27 $\overline{q}q$ D. quenquam habebam de hominibus V. habebam quemquam (quenquam G. $\overline{q}e\overline{q}$ uam CF) de hominibus PΔ. de hominibus *om* Ψ (hominem V₄). 239,27 et deinde—240,3 donec *desunt in* Ψ, *nisi quod Probus obiter res gestas narrat.* et *om* P. postmodum conuer- R *mut.* 240,1 intermissi D. quo *om* D. .ui. annis D. annis sex φ. annis — 2 ueni R *mut.* 1—2 et in uirtute dei ueni ad bonum qui uiam meam dirigebat V (qui uiam meam dirigebat ueni ad Benum [*lege Bonum?*] PAPEBROCH). dirigebat F. et nihil: ex nihilo (nichilo G) Δ₂. R *mut.* 3 metuebam R *mut.* donec *om* F. 4 illa die qua (die *om* PΔ [*add manus saec. XVII in C*]. qua *om* R. $\overline{a}d\overline{q}u\overline{a}$ G): mox cum V. ad eam p perueni *ins* V. nauis *om* V. de loco suo R *mut.* 5 inde PVRFC. (*retinendum censet* P. GROSJEAN.) nauigare Φ: nauigarem D. de Ψ *non constat.* et gubernator PC. (*fortasse* G a c; p gub- R *mut*): et gubernatori DFG'.Ψ. gubernatori autem V. 6 illi *om* VG' (*exstat rasura*). Ψ. acriter: hac artis P. indignatione: interrogatione (*corr in mg*) D. indignationem R. 6—7 -quam tu nobiscum R *mut.* 7 adpetis P. appetas V. V₂^H. adpetas Δ. 8 audissem Φ. sepaui D. ut: ut et PΔ₂. (et s s) F. et ut V. et u (*cetera usque ad mut*) R. ut a ad *ins* P. ad *om* G. tegoriorium D: tugoriorium ΦΨ. 9 ubi: ibi G. hospitabar Ψ. itinere D. antequ (-am — 10 orationem *mut*) R. 10 unum — exclamabat: unum (*sequente spatio*) clamare ex illis fortiter R. et *om* ΦΨ. exclamare VF (*cf* clamare R). exclamantem: G'Ψ. 11 ueni cito R *mut.* uocabant P. 12 reuersurus (s *alterum incertum*) R. 12—13 sum — coeperunt R *mut.*

et coeperunt mihi dicere: 'Veni, quia ex fide recipimus te; fac nobiscum amicitiam quo modo uolueris' — et in illa die itaque reppuli

15 *sugere mammellas eorum* propter timorem Dei, sed uerumtamen ab illis speraui uenire in fidem Iesu Christi, quia gentes erant — et ob hoc obtinui cum illis, et protinus nauigauimus,

19 (19) et post triduum terram cepimus et uiginti octo dies per desertum iter fecimus et cibus defuit illis et *fames inualuit super eos*,

20 et alio die coepit gubernator mihi dicere: Quid est, Christiane? tu dicis deus tuus magnus et omnipotens est; quare ergo non potes pro nobis orare? quia nos a fame periclitamur; difficile est enim ut aliquem hominem umquam uideamus'. Ego enim confidenter

241,1 dixi illis: '*Conuertimini ex fide ex toto corde ad Dominum Deum*

13 dicere *om R.* recepimus $\Phi.V_2\beta$ et a fac *ins Φ .* 14 amicitiam quo modo R *mut.* quo modo *distinxi:* quomodo $\omega.V_2$. quo modo uolueris: quolueris C. 240,14 et — 17 nauigauimus *desunt in Ψ , Probo tantum de rebus gestis mentionem faciente.* in *om R.* itaque *om V.* 14—15 reppuli sugere mammellas eorum D: reppuli sugere mammas eorum V. repulis fugire mamas illorum RF. repuli fugere manus illorum P. repulsus sum fugere amicitias illorum Δ_2 . 15 timorem *om V.* timorem dei R *mut.* sed *om G (exstat rasura).* ueruntamen G. ueram P. uerū tam F. 16 ab-fidem: speraui ab illis ut mihi dicerent ueni in fide Φ ; sed cf *Prob:* sperabat illos ad fidem Christi uenturos. Iesu *om V.* Prob. quia: -a *deest in R.* 17 ob *om Φ .* obtinuit VR. (t in fine eras) F. et — nauigauimus *om D.* protimis P. 18 post tridu- R *mut.* terra P. xxuiii D. uiginti et octo P: uiginti et (*om F*) septem $V\Delta$. disertum D. 19 et cibus: cibus autem et potus V. R *mut.* defuit: defecit V. illis: nobis V. famis P. (e ex i, ut uid, G') Δ . super: in R. eos: nos V. 20 alia Φ . et alio die: tunc Ψ . michi guber- (*cetera mut*) R. est *om D.* 21 quia p dicis *ins Ψ (pr $V_2\beta$).* 21—22 pro nobis orare non potes D. orare *om P.* 22 ora pro nobis a quia *ins V.* nos *om V.* a *om VRG.* nos a *om Ψ pr V_2 .* est *om DPRF.* 23 umquam a ut *transp D.* enim: uero V. enim uero P. (ego enim: tunc Ψ .) confidenter Ψ (cf *supra p 27*): euidenter ω . 241,1 conuertimini D. ex fide *om V.J.* ex toto corde *om D.* et p fide *ins $P\Delta_2.V_2$.* uestro p corde *add R.*

15 Os 14,1 sugentes mamellas illorum k (paruuli *VULG.* ὑποτίθῃα LXX). 19 cf Gen 12,10 praeualuerat enim fames in terra *VULG.* (desse uidetur *VetLat*); sed cf ὅτι ἐνίσχυσεν ὁ λιμὸς ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς (= super terram) LXX. 241,1 Joel 2,12 conuertimini (reuertimini *Cypr Lucif*) ad me ex (in t *AugSpec Hier* HEB.LXX *VULG.* s s alia manus in *m^M*, *om Conf 2*) toto corde uestro (ἐπιστρέφητε πρὸς με ἐξ ὅλης τῆς καρδίας ὑμῶν LXX). 13 et conuertimini ad dnm dm uestrum. Cf *Conf 2* (235,15—16).

- meum, quia nihil est impossibile illi, ut hodie cibum mittat uobis in uiam uestram usque dum satiamini, quia ubique habundat illi', et adiuuante Deo ita factum est: ecce grex porcorum in uia*
 5 *ante oculos nostros apparuit, et multos ex illis interfecerunt et ibi duas noctes manserunt et bene refecti et canes eorum repleti sunt, quia multi ex illis defecerunt et secus uiam semiuiui relict*
sunt,
et post hoc summas gratias egerunt Deo et ego honorificatus
 10 *sum sub oculis eorum; et ex hac die cibum habundanter habuerunt; etiam mel siluestre inuenerunt et mihi partem obtulerunt et unus ex illis dixit: 'Immolaticium est'; Deo gratias, exinde nihil gustauit.*
 20. Eadem uero nocte eram dormiens et fortiter temptauit me

2 illi in(im- G) possibile PΔ. quia — illi: cui nihil est impossibile D. ut: et P. cybum PF. mittat uobis cibum V. mittat cibum nobis R. uobis ex nobis P. nobis RF. 3 satiemi Φ.W. abundat FΔ₂Ψ (sed hab-V^{CD}). 4 et om Φ. ergo a deo ins V. et a ecce ins P. 5 apparuit om Φ. ueniebat a ante ins V. interfecerunt D. ibi: ubi R. 6 .ii. D. duas ex duos F. et (1) om VΔ. et (2) — 7 relict deest Ψ. canes: carnes PΔ₂. (carne G'). repleti: releuati PΔ₂. reuelati VRF. 7 illis: eis G. defecerunt et om D. relict D: derelicti Φ. 9 h̄ D. post hoc om Ψ. sumnas F. 9—10 honorificatusum V. 10 et — habuerunt om D. h̄c F. habundanter (abundanter RΔ₂. habundantūr ex -intur, ut uid, F) cibum (cȳbum PF) habuerunt PΔ. 11 etiam: sed etiam V. (et V₃; de Ψ non constat.) mel: semel P. siluistre D. siluestrum P. inuenierunt D. deinuene- R. optulerunt P. unum R. 12 hoc a immolaticium ins Φ. immolaticium V₃. immolatum FG'. im(in-R) molatium RC. immolaticum D MUIR^B; immolatum PV. nihil exinde P. 14 nocte om D. me temptauit R. tentauit V₄.

2 Luc. 1,37 quia non est (erit $h_2 r_2$ [8] deer VULG^{pr}. Q. erat $\dim \mu$ Q) impossibile do ($b c e f f_2 l q$: apud dm VL^{cett}. VULG) omne uerbum. Cf Tert carn 3: do nihil impossibile; Prax 10: nihil do difficile. Matth 17,20 et nihil impossibile est ($f f_2$: erit VL^{cett}. VULG) uobis (uobis impossibile erit $f f_1$). 7 cf Matth 15,32 ne deficient (dissolbantur d. resoluantur k) in uia (itinere d). Luc 10,30 semiuiuo relicto VLP^l. VULG: semiuiuum dimittentes c(d). demiserunt semiuiuum e. relinquerent semiuiuum Aug. 11 mel siluestre: Matth 3,4; Marc 1,6. Luc 24,42 at illi obtulerunt (porrexerunt a d e r₁) ei partem piscis assi et fauum mellis (et — mellis om d e). 12 1 Cor 10,28 hoc (om w Aug^{V. 705}) immolaticium (d-g w. cor uat*. VULG^{pl} [-titium H^c. -cicum P. immolatum A*Z²]: immolatum t. [Aug^{I. 728}]. 'moderni' in cor uat. V W vg. sacrificatum D. CanonHibern) est idolis.

- 15 satanas, quod memor ero *quamdiu fuero in hoc corpore*, et cecidit
super me ueluti saxum ingens et nihil membrorum meorum prae-
ualens. Sed unde me uenit ignaro in spiritu ut Heliam uocarem?
Et inter haec uidi in caelum solem oriri et dum clamarem 'Helia, Helia'
uiribus meis, ecce splendor solis illius decedit super me et
20 statim discussit a me omnem grauitudinem, et credo quod a
Christo Domino meo subuentus sum et spiritus eius iam tunc
clamabat pro me et spero quod sic erit *in die pressurae* meae,
sicut in euangelio inquit: *In illa die*, Dominus testatur, non
242,1 *uos estis qui loquimini, sed spiritus Patris uestri qui loquitur in*
uobis.
21 21. Et iterum post annos multos adhuc capturam dedi. Ea

15 sathanas VR. quod: cuius G', cf V₄. quamdiu D. quādiu VRC. fuero:
fueram (-ro e corr G) Δ. in hoc corpore fuero V₄. corpore, et *interpunxit*
Esposito. et cecidit: cecidit enim V₄. cecidit D. 16 uelut V. saxa
ingentia C. Muir^{BN}. et — 247,25 filii *folium excidit in* V. membrorum R. mē-
brorum C. meorum om D. (erat in V teste PAPEBROCHIO.) pualens D:
pualui Φ (de V testatur PAPEBROCH). non consonat Ψ, sed cf et omnium membro-
rum meorum uires abstulit V₄. et quasi comminuens iam omnia membra eius
Muir. ita ut nichil membrorum suorum posset mouere V₃. 17 sed unde me uenit
ignaro in spiritu ut Heliam uocarem *dubitanter scripsi*: sed unde mihi uenit in spiritum
ut Heliam uocarem D: sed unde me (mihi G') uenit ignarum (ignoro G') in (et RF)
spiritu Heliam uocarem (-re PG') PΔ: sed unde me uenit ignoro in spiritu ut Heliam
uocarem Ψ. (sed unde uenit ignoro ut spiritu Heliam inuocarem v, cf inuocato Helia
Muir^B. inuocans Heliam IoCEL.) 18 inter haec (Φ). Ψ: in hoc D. in caelum aspi-
ciens solem oriri uidebam V₄. celo (caelo C) (Φ). solem in celo R. orire P.
dum: cum V₄. clamarem Dv. V₄: clamabam PΔ. Helia Helia V₄. heliam heliam
vΔ. heliam DP. totis a uiribus ins v.V₄. 19 meis in ras, ut uid, G. et a ecce
ins PRF. illius om P. decedit: cecidit Pv.V₄. 20 omnem om D. grauedinem
v. 21 domino om v.V₄. subuentus — tunc om D. eius: eus R. eius iam
om V₄. 22 clamauit (Φ). pro: in V₄. quod: quia V₄. psurae D. 23 sicut
— 242,2 uobis deest Ψ. in illa die om D. illo R. testatur om D. (testatur pro
inquit et uice uersa v.) 242,1 qui (1) — 3 annos om D (z in mg). qui (2) — 3
iterum R mul. 3 et — 7 eorum p 11 habuimus in v. 3 mōltos G. multos
annos Ψ. annos <non> multos WARE. O'CONOR. adhuc om Ψ.

15 2 Petr 1,13 quamdiu sum in hoc corpore (h: tabernaculo [z] VULG). Cf Conf
44 (249,4). 22 Ps 49,15 in die pressurae (Cypr ActMontani PsMax [θλίψεως LXX]:
tribulationis PSALT^{cett}) tuae (om Cypr PsMax c LXX^{pl}). Cf Conf 5 (236,23—24).
241,23—242,2 Matth 10,19—20 dabitur enim uobis in illa die (Hilⁱⁿ Ps 118 [447,19—21
Zingerle] pr codd CEP, c (C*)^{gr} sy^{pal} COPT^{boh}(3 codd): hora VetLat^{cett}. VULG) quid
loquimini: non enim uos estis qui loquimini, sed sps patris uestri qui loquitur in uobis.

- nocte prima itaque mansi cum illis. *Responsum autem diuinum*
 5 audiui dicentem mihi: 'Duobus mensibus eris cum illis'. Quod
 ita factum est: nocte illa sexagesima *liberauit me Dominus de*
manibus eorum.
- 22 22. Etiam in itinere praeuidit nobis cibum et ignem et siccitatem
 cotidie donec decimo die peruenimus homines. Sicut superius in-
 10 sinuauimus, uiginti et octo dies per desertum iter fecimus et ea nocte qua
 peruenimus homines de cibo uero nihil habuimus.
- 23 23. Et iterum post paucos annos in Brittanniis eram cum paren-
 tibus meis, qui me ut filium susceperunt et ex fide rogauerunt me ut
 uel modo ego post tantas tribulationes quas ego pertuli nusquam ab
 15 illis discederem,
 et ibi scilicet *uidi in uisu noctis* uirum uenientem quasi de
 Hiberione, cui nomen Victoricus, cum epistolis innumerabilibus,

4 prima — cum R *mut.* prima nocte Ψ. itaque *deest* in Ψ. autem *deest* in Ψ.
 5 dicentem mihi *om* D. dicente F. dicens G'v. Ψ. mihi — mensibus R *mut.*
 duobus mensibus Ψ. duobus autem mensibus D: duos menses P_vFΔ₂. 6 nocte illa
 sexagensima D. (-esima) v *ex Usserio*: sexagesimo die Ψ: nocte illa sexagesimo (-essimo
 C) die P_vFΔ₂. -simo — liberauit R *mut.* 7 eorum: illorum P. 8 etiam in itinere
deest Ψ. etiam: et ecce P. ecce Δ. (in itinere autem v.) itenere D. praeuidit:
 (prouidit v.) nobis — igne- R *mut.* cȳbum P. 9 decimo Ψ. x decimo D: xiiii.
 P. quarto decimo vΔ. die peruenimus R *mut.* (praeuenimus v.) homines P_v.
 ad omnes R. ad homines Δ₂. MUR (Prob). *defendit* BURY: omnes DF. sicut — 11
 homines *om* F. sicut — 11 habuimus *deest* Ψ. 10 xx et uiiii DP. dies per *om* D. dies
 per desertum R *mut.* disertum D. fācimus D. 11 (peruenimus: praeuiimus v.) ho-
 mines P. ad homines Δ₂: omnes D_vR. cȳbo P. uero nihil R *mut.* (p habuimus *ins* 3 et
 — 7 eorum v.) 12 (et *om* v.) Britannis D. briactanniis P. brittanniis (-aniis Δ₂) Δ.
 Britannia Ψ. (v); cf 248,23 sq. cum parentibus R *mut.* 13 susceperunt D.
 (exceperunt v.) 13—14 -runt — uel R *mut.* p ut (2) *rasura*, ut *uid*, in G.
 14 modo: sic Ψ. ego: me P_vFΔ₂. *om* vR. de Ψ *non constat*. tribulationes *ex* -atas
 F. quas — pertuli *deest* Ψ. nusquam ab R *mut.* nusquam: numquam P_vδ. Ψ.
 15 illis: stis (i. e. istis), ut *uid*, R. discedere R. 16 scilicet *deest* in Ψ. (ibi uero
 V₂.) uidi p 17 innumerabilibus D. uisu (Φ), cf uidit uisionem W: sinu D. nocte
 PΔ. (de nocte v.) de Ψ *non constat*. uenientem qu- R *mut.* 17 cui nomen uicto-
 ricus D: uictoricus nomen PΔ. (Uictricius nomine v.): Uictoricum (Uictorem V₄)
 nomine Ψ. -merabilibus et R *mut.*

4 responsum diuinum: Rom 11,4; cf Conf 17.29.35. 6—7 Gen 37,21 liberauit
 (cum ἐξείλατο LXX, *Lugd Aug*: nitebatur liberare VULG) eum de manibus eorum.
Locutio in Libris Sacris usitata. 16 Dan 7,13 uidebam (aspiciebam ergo VULG)
 in uisu ([g] *Cypr Lact Ruf Aug Vig*: uisione *Lucif VULG*) noctis (-te *Cypr*). Cf
 Conf 29 (244,13).

- et dedit mihi unam ex his et legi principium epistolae continen-
tem 'Vox Hiberionacum', et cum recitabam principium epistolae
20 putabam ipso momento audire uocem ipsorum, qui erant iuxta
siluam Vocluti quae est prope mare occidentale, et sic exclamaue-
runt *quasi ex uno ore*: 'Rogamus te, [sancte] puer, ut uenias et adhuc
ambulas inter nos',
243,1 et ualde *compunctus sum corde* et amplius non potui legere et sic
expertus sum. Deo gratias, quia post plurimos annos praestitit illis
Dominus secundum clamorem illorum.
24 24. Et alia nocte — *nescio, Deus scit*, utrum in me an iuxta me —
5 uerbis peritissime, quos ego audiui et non potui intellegere, nisi
ad postremum orationis sic effitatus est: '*Qui dedit animam suam pro te*,

18 et dedit: occidit P. unum R. his: illis (Φ). continentem P. hoc continens Ψ.
18—19 continentem — uo- R *mut.* 19 hiberionacum P. (hiberio na//cum F) Δ. Hyber-
ionacum D. Hiberionum Ψ. (Hyberionarum v.) cum vΔ. dum D: tunc P. (cum reci-
tabam *restitui in* Ψ, *sed u uar lect.*) epistolae om Ψ. 20 enim p putabam ins D. ipso
momento v. (moment[R] Δ. Ψ. ipso momente P. ipse in mente D. audiui P. uocem
ipsorum audire Ψ. ipsorum: illorum R 21 silua C. -m *deest in* R. Vocluti *scripsi*
cum R. THURNEYSEN et T. F. O'RAHILLY: focluti D. (v *ex Usserio*): foclut(h), *ut uid*,
Ψ: uirgulti uoluti Φ (uirgulti uelutique P. uirgulti ... V *teste* PAPEBROCHIO. uirgulti
ueluti R. uirgultiq; F. uirgulti uolutiq; Δ₂, *sed puncta sub uoluti in* G). occidentale
Dv: occidentem PΔ. exclama- R *mut.* 22 quasi — ore om D. hore PF. sancte
deleuit R. A. S. MACALISTER (JOURN. R. SOC. OF ANTIQUARIES OF IRELAND 62 [1932]
25 f.). sancte puer D (v *ex Usserio*). V₃^{Tin}: sanctum puerum PΔ. V₂. (*ex interpolatione*
liturgica sancte puer Patrici V₃^{Dg}. sancte Patrici V₄: sanctum puerum Patricium V₃^{Gr} Γ.)
uenias R *mut.* 23 ambulas D: ambules (Φ). Ψ. inter nos ambules R. 1 am-
plius: uald amplius D. -plius R *mut.* 2 expertus D: expergefactus (Φ). Ψ.
annos plurimos (-os *ex -us* F) (Φ). praestitit: prestat P. 3 illorum: eorum (Φ).
(ω) *desinit* Ψ. 4 scit: sit F. 5 peritissime (z *in mg*) D. peritissimi P. peritissimis
vΔ₂. pritissimis F. perterritus R. <audiebam quosdam ex spiritu psallentes intra me
et nesciebam qui essent> quos ego audiui *ex* V₄ *dubio iure suppl v. fortasse*: apertissime
(*uerbum suppleri potest ex* 242, 21). intelligere PvG. intelligere, *ut uid*, R. 6 post-
remum (Φ): posterum D. effitatus P. efficiatus D: affatus vΔ. effatus STOKES,
cf l 12 (Δ₂). qui dedit pro te animam suam Pv. qui pro te animam suam RF. qui
pro te animam suam posuit Δ₂.

22 Dan 3, 51 quasi (R *Nicetius Spicilegium III 12a* [Sab] t *VULG*: tamquam
Cyprecodd mell) ex uno ore. 1 cf Act 2, 37 compuncti sunt corde. Ps 108, 17 ho-
minem ... compunctum corde. 4 2 Cor 12, 2 siue in corpore nescio (*om Aug Pelag*
DH^c SUW § S) siue extra corpus nescio, ds scit. 12, 3 siue in corpore siue extra
corpus nescio (*om Iren c Bgr*), ds scit. Cf Conf 27 (244, 3). 6 1 Ioh 3, 16 quoniam
ille animam suam pro nobis (mΣ *Aug* [pecc merit 2, 54. *Spec^S sem*] *vg*: pro nobis
animam suam h l m^S q *Aug* [Spec^{sem} Serm 565, 28 Morin] *VULG*) posuit.

ipse est qui loquitur in te', et sic expertus sum gaudibundus.

- 25 25. Et iterum uidi in me ipsum orantem et eram quasi intra corpus meum et audiui super me, hoc est super *interiorem hominem*,
 10 et ibi fortiter orabat gemitibus, et inter haec *stupebam et ammirabam et cogitabam* quis esset qui in me orabat, sed ad postremum orationis sic effitiatus est ut sit Spiritus, et sic expertus sum et recordatus sum apostolo dicente: *Spiritus adiuuat infirmitates orationis nostrae: nam quod oremus sicut oportet nescimus: sed ipse Spiritus*
 15 *postulat pro nobis gemitibus inenarrabilibus, quae uerbis exprimi non possunt*; et iterum: *Dominus aduocatus noster postulat pro nobis*.
 26 26. Et quando temptatus sum ab aliquantis senioribus meis, qui uenerunt, et peccata mea, contra laboriosum episcopatum meum,

7 ipse — te omi (Φ). expertus D: expergefactus PΔ. gaudebundus PΔ. (et sic euigilaui v.) 8 (uidi: audiui v.) (eram: erat v.) quasi om C. 9 super me om D. 10 stupebam R. admirabar (Φ). 11 in me orabat: oret in me PΔ (oraret in me v.) ad: at R. om P. postremum P. 12 effitiatus P. efficiatus D: effatus Δ₂. effectus F. effectus R. (dixit v.) spiritus: episcopus DRFC. sps (s prius e corr) G. (se esse Spiritum v.) expertus: exceptus P. (om v.) sic p et (2) ins P. 13 infirmitatem (Φ). 13—14 orationis nostrae Dv. nostre orationis Δ: nostram orationis P. 14 nam quod D: nam quid (numquid FΔ₂, sed corr in G' et a manu saec. XVII in C) (Φ). 15 inerrabilibus D. quae: qui P. expmi D. (exprimere v.) 16 possunt D. possum v. potest PΔ. dominus: deus C. est p aduocatus ins PvF. (et ipse p noster ins v.) 17 et — (Φ) 244, 13 illam om D (in mg manus recentior: multa desunt). tem|tatus F. 18 episcopato meo P. p meum uerbum excidisse suspicatur Bury.

9 Eph 3,16 uirtute corroborari... in interiorem hominem (cum GR εἰς τὸν ἑσω ἄνθρωπον, c d e g Tert TEST^{al} BFHKNPV cod caraf. cor uat. C: in interiore homine f t VULG^{cell}). 10—11 Is 29,9 obstupescite et admiramini VULG: deficite et a mente (amentes m) estote m w cum LXX. Act 8,13 stupebat (e p. obstupiscebat d: stupens admirabatur c gig r VULG). Cf Dan 8,27 (VULG). Hab 1,5 (vg). Luc 1,29 et cogitabat qualis esset ista salutatio c (d) dim h₂ r₂ t' (δ deer L) VULG^{pr} L: et erat cogitans quod sic benedixisset eam, VLP^l. 13—16 Rom 8,26 sps adiuuat infirmitates (Conf^D cum [KLP al]^{gr}: infirmitatem VetLat VULG) orationis nostrae (codd gr-lat Ff, Gg. VULG^{F*}; nostrae orationis t Ambrst Ambr D: infirmitatem nostram c d VULG^{pl}); nam quod (g t: quid VetLat^{cell}. VULG) oremus sicut oportet nescimus: sed ipse sps postulat pro nobis gemitibus inenarrabilibus (enarrabilibus D) <quae uerbis exprimi non possunt t F*GLT: qui eloqui non possunt (omissa uoce inenarrabilibus) d*, cf capitula in A al>. Cf Conf 35 (246,4) quae uerbis exprimere non ualeo. 16 1 Ioh 2,1 aduocatum (paracletum Faust) habemus apud patrem ihm xpm iustum. Cf supra Rom 8,26 sed ipse sps postulat pro nobis. Qui loci similiter atque hic iunguntur in PsAug. Quaest Vet et Noui Test app 77 (471,3—4 Souter) habemus aduocatum qui postulat pro peccatis nostris.

utique illo die fortiter *impulsus sum ut caderem* hic et in aeternum;
 20 sed Dominus pepercit proselito et peregrino propter nomen suum
 benigne

et ualde mihi subuenit in hac conculcatione. Quod in labe et in obpro-
 brium non male deueni! Deum oro ut *non illis in peccatum reputetur*.

- 27 27. *Occasionem* post annos triginta *inuenerunt me aduersus*
 uerbum quod confessus fueram antequam essem diaconus. Propter
 244,1 anxietatem maesto animo insinuaui amicissimo meo quae in pueritia
 mea una die gesseram, immo in una hora, quia necdum praeualebam.
Nescio, Deus scit, si habebam tunc annos quindecim, et Deum uiuum
 non credebam, neque ex infantia mea, sed in morte et in increduli-
 5 tate mansi donec ualde castigatus sum *et in ueritate humiliatus sum*
a fame et nuditate, et cotidie.
- 28 28. Contra, Hiberione non sponte pergebam, *donec* prope *deficiebam*;
 sed hoc potius bene mihi fuit, qui ex hoc emendatus sum a
 Domino, et aptauit me ut hodie essem quod aliquando longe a me
 10 erat, ut ego curam haberem aut satagerem pro salute aliorum, quando
 autem tunc etiam de me ipso non cogitabam.

- 19 utique: utque C. (nonnumquam v.) in a illo ins vΔ. sum om P. et om P.
 in aeternum: et internum R. 21 labe PRC. labe *sequente rasura* F. labē G. labem v.
 obproprium P. 22 deo P. reputetur: deputetur R. 23 occasionum PΔ. (occasio: nam
 v.) corr WHITE. uero p annos ins R. xxx^{ta} P. .xxx. R. et p me ins Δ. 24 antequam
 vRF: ante quod PC. ante qm (ex qđ?) G'. *nescio an scripserit Patricius* antequod (= antequam), cf E. LÖFSTEDT Vermischte Studien zur lateinischen Sprachkunde u.
 Syntax, 1936, 20. 244,1 anxietatem R. (nc corr in m) G. meo finit R.
 (φ) 2 in una: incina G. 3 habeam Δ₂. annis (-os ex -is G) δ. xu. P. 4 in incre-
 dulitate: in crudelitate F. 7 hiberionē G. (Hyberionem v.) donec — deficie-
 bam om P. 8 hoc vG: hec P. hec FC. qui: quia vFC. qa G. 10 curas vδ.
 11 autem *punctis subtilis* G. (autem tunc om v.)

19 Ps 117,13 tamquam cumulus arenae impulsus sum ut caderem Aug R Moz¹: im-
 pulsus uersatus (euersus *Prosp Cass Gall*^{pl}. subuersus *Ambr*) sum ut caderem Ps V—om
Gall. (ὠσθεῖς ἀντράπην τοῦ πεσεῖν LXX): impulsus pellebar ut caderem *Heb*.
 22 Deut 24,15 ne ... reputetur tibi in peccatum (m^{αμ} Aug^{Spec} VULG: et erit in
 te peccatum m^{SΣ}). Cf 1 Par 21,3 quod in peccatum reputetur Israeli. 2 Tim 4,16 in
 prima defensione nemo mihi adfuit ... non illis reputetur (imputetur *VLom*. TEST.
 DGHΘRVWZ. *cod caraf.vg*). 23 Dan 6,5 non inuenimus aduersus Danihel causam
 g: non inuenimus Danieli huic (om *Hier*) aliquam occasionem VULG. 244,3 nescio,
 ds scit: 2 Cor 12,2.3; u Conf 24 (243,4). 5 Ps 118,75 et in (om R Aug GR) ueritate
 <tua RV *Ambr Rom Gall Med*^{man}. Moz² Rgr> humiliasti me (in ueritate: uere *Hil Heb*).
 6 cf 2 Cor 11,27 (Deut 28,24) in fame ... et nuditate. 7 cf Ps 17,38 donec deficiant

- 29 29. Igitur in illo die quo *reprobatus sum* a memoratis supradictis ad noctem illam *uidi in uisu noctis* scriptum erat contra faciem meam sine honore, et inter haec audiui *respondum diuinum* dicentem mihi: Male uidimus faciem designati nudato nomine, nec sic praedixit: Male uidisti, sed: Male uidimus, quasi sibi se iunxisset, sicut dixit: *Qui uos tangit quasi qui tangit pupillam oculi mei*.
- 30 30. Idcirco *gratias ago ei qui me in omnibus confortauit*, ut non me impediret a profectione quam statueram et de mea quoque opera quod a Christo Domino meo didiceram, sed magis ex eo *sensi in me uirtutem* non paruam et fides mea probata est coram Deo et hominibus.
- 31 31. Vnde autem *audenter dico* non me reprehendit conscientia mea hic et in futurum: *teste Deo habeo quia non sum mentitus* in sermonibus quos ego retuli uobis.

(ω) 13 uidi *inc* D. uissu D. <scriptum quod> scriptum erat BURY. 14 diuinum *om* D. dicens G'v. 15 uidimus: audiuius D. designati Dv: dei signati Pδ. Deisignati (*i. e.* Θεοσφραγίστου) interpretatur MAC ERLEAN (cf. D. S. NERNEY I.E.R. 71, 1949, 504¹), fortasse recte. 16 sibi D: ibi (φ). *an s<i> ibi?* cf LEBMANN-HOFMANN p. 783 iunxit (φ). *uerba quasi — iunxisset glossam esse suspicatur* P. GROSJEAN. 17 tangit *bis* D. (tanget *posteriore loco* v.) qui (2) *om* P. (quasi qui *om* v.) pupilla P. 18 iccirco G. ut: et P. 19 inpediret D. inpe*diret G. inpenderet FC. quam s s G. qua D. meo... opere G'v. 20 domino *om* (φ). dediceram D. 20—21 in me *om* D. 23—24 conscientia mea: conscientiam P. 24 teste deo abeo D. testem deo habeo P. testem deum habeo vδ. mentitus: mentius P. 25 uobis *om* (φ).

12 1 Petr 2,7 (*ex* Ps 117,22) lapis quem reprobauerunt aedificantes (reprobatus lapis *Iren*^{4,33,1}). 13 uidi in uisu noctis: Dan 7,13; u Conf 23 (242,16). 14 responsum diuinum: Rom 11,4. Cf Conf 17.21.35. 17 Zach 2,8 ὁ ἀπτόμενος ὑμῶν ὡς <ὁ Ν ΑΓQ *Lukian Catenae*> ἀπτόμενος τῆς κόρης τοῦ ὀφθαλμοῦ αὐτοῦ (μου W) LXX. quia (quoniam *Bodl Auct F. 4.32*) qui tangit (*m.* tetigerit *Hier*^{LXX}: qui enim tetigerit [*Tert*] *VULG*) uos <quasi (sicut *m*) qui *Bodl Auct F. 4.32*; *m Aug Ambr.* (*om* qui) *Hier*^{LXX}: ac si *Tert*> tangit pupillam oculi eius (ipsius *Bodl Auct F. 4.32*. mei [*Tert*] *Vig vg*). 18 1 Tim 1,12 gratias ago ei qui me confortauit *VLP^r dg. VULG.* cf Phil 4,13 (*pr d e g*). 20—21 Luc 8,46 sensi (*c*; *Tert.* sentio *Ambr.* *De Isaac* 43, p 667, 10—11 *Schenkl*: scui d. scio *Hier.* noui *g₂ h h₂ VULG^{pl}*, cf *Aug.* cognoui *VLP^l Ambr.* *Exp Luc VI.58. PGL*) uirtutem de (a *VL^{cd}*) me exisse (uidens quod exierat ... μ) *VL. VULG.* Marc 5,30 cognoscens (cognouit *c d e ff₂ q r₁*. cognito *b*) in semetipso uirtutem *VL. VULG.* 23 Act 2,29 liceat audenter dicere *c t VULG* (dicere audacter *p²*. dicere constanter *gig p* r.* dicere cum fiducia [*cf GR εἰπεῖν μετὰ παρησίᾳς d e*). Cf Conf 33 (245,11). 24 2 Cor 1,23 ego autem testem dm inuoco in animam meam, quod ... Gal 1,20 quae autem scribo uobis, ecce coram do quia non mentior. Cf Conf 44.54.

- 32 32. Sed magis doleo pro amicissimo meo cur hoc meruimus audire tale responsum. Cui ego credidi etiam animam! Et comperi ab aliquantis fratribus ante defensionem illam (quod ego non interfui
 245,1 nec in Brittanniis eram nec a me orie<ba>tur) ut et ille in mea absentia pulsaret pro me; etiam mihi ipse ore suo dixerat: 'Ecce dandus es tu ad gradum episcopatus', quod non eram dignus. Sed unde uenit illi postmodum ut coram cunctis, bonis et malis, et me publice deho-
 5 nestaret quod ante sponte et laetus indulerat, et Dominus, qui *maior omnibus est*?
- 33 33. Satis dico. Sed tamen non debeo abscondere *donum Dei* quod largitus est nobis *in terra captiuitatis meae*, quia tunc fortiter inquisiui eum et ibi inueni illum et seruauit me ab omnibus iniquitatibus
 10 (sic credo) *propter inhabitantem Spiritum* eius, qui *operatus est* usque in hanc diem in me. *Audenter* rursus. Sed scit Deus, si mihi homo hoc effatus fuisset, forsitan tacuissem propter *caritatem Christi*.
- 34 34. Vnde ergo indefessam gratiam ago Deo meo, qui me fidelem seruauit *in die temptationis* meae, ita ut hodie confidenter offeram illi
 15 sacrificium ut *hostiam uiuentem* animam meam Christo Domino meo,

15 SECUNDINUS 40: quam (*i e* carnem) ut hostiam placentem uiuam offert Domino.

- (φ) 26 sed — 245,28 ultra est *om D* (*in mg manus recentior*: desunt plurima). doleo: deleo F. 27 talem P. ego: ergo C. 28 defensionem vδ: dissensionem P. interfui: inter. P. 245,1 britanniis P. (Britanniis v.) orie<ba>tur BURY: orietur (φ) 2 pro me pulsaret δ. (pulsetur pro me v.) dandus: datus F. (promouendus v.) 4 ille P. coram: curam P. malas P. et (2): ut P. (in v.) publice Δ. 7 non *om* F. 11 (hanc: hunc v.) (audenter — 12 fuisset *non consonat* v.) audienter F. scit: sit F. 14 confitenter F. 15 uiuentem (φ); *sed uiuam* (c VL) *Secundinus*.
-

5—6 Ioh 10,29 ὁ πατήρ μου ὃς δέδωκέν μοι μέζων πάντων ἐστίν ΓΑΛΠΑ, cf omnium maior est *d* (πάντων μέζων ἐστίν **Σ** DL): pater meus quod dedit mihi maius omnibus est *VetLat^{pl}*. *VULG* cum B^{gr} ὁ πατήρ μου ὃς δέδωκέν μοι μέζων πάντων ἐστίν. 7 donum di: Ioh 4,10. Cf Conf 14 (239,6). 62 (253,15). 8 in terra captiuitatis meae: 2 Par 6,37 *et passim*; cf Conf 3 (236,5). 10 Rom 8,11 propter (διὰ τό: per, cum διὰ τοῦ [**Σ**AC min]^{gr}, f Aug Vig) inhabitantem spm eius in uobis. 1 Cor 12,11 haec autem omnia operatus est (*Ambr*: operatur *Vet Lat^{cett}*, *VULG*) unus atque idem sps. 11 audenter: Act 2,29. Cf Conf 31 (244,23). 12 caritatem Christi: 2 Cor 5,14. Cf Conf 13 (239,3). 14 Ps 94,9 in die temptationis A M *Heb*: secundum (κατά LXX) diem temptationis Aug R Rom G Gall Moz² Med^{man}. 15 Rom 12,1 hostiam uiuentem (ζῶσαν) c—f m^s t *VULG^{pl}*. uiuam uel uiuentem g. uiuam *que* m^Σ w Tert Aug Spec pr PRSav. Faust DO*R. cf *Secund*).

qui me *seruauit ab omnibus angustiis meis*, ut et dicam: *Quis ego sum, Domine*, uel quae est uocatio mea, qui mihi † tanta diuinitate cooperasti†, ita ut hodie *in gentibus* constanter *exaltarem et magnificarem nomen tuum* ubicumque loco fuero, nec non in secundis
 20 sed etiam in pressuris, ut quicquid mihi euenerit siue bonum siue malum aequaliter debeo suscipere et Deo gratias semper agere, qui mihi ostendit ut indubitabilem eum sine fine crederem et qui me audierit ut ego inscius et *in nouissimis diebus* hoc opus tam pium et tam mirificum auderem adgredere, ita ut imitarem quippiam illos
 25 quos ante Dominus iam olim praedixerat praenuntiatiuros euangelium suum *in testimonium omnibus gentibus ante finem mundi*, quod ita ergo uidimus itaque suppletum est: ecce testes sumus quia euangelium praedicatum est usque ubi nemo ultra est.
 35 246,1 35. Longum est autem totum per singula enarrare laborem meum uel per partes. Breuiter dicam qualiter piissimus Deus de seruitute

17—18 tanta diuinitatē (*uirgula incerta*) cooperasti P. tantā diuinitatē (-am C) coop(er)uisti δ. (tantam diuinitatem denudasti v.) tantam diuinitatem aperuisti WHITE. tantam diuinitatem comparasti GROSJEAN. tanta diuinitate comparuisti *ipse temptabam*, cf *uar lect ad 246,28*. 18 in om F. in gentibus constanter om v. exaltarem v: exultarem Pδ; cf *uar lect ad 251,19*. 19 loco eras G. (in quocumque loco v.) etiam p non ins P. (nec tantum v.) 20 p̄suris P. 22 et: ut F. 23 audierit (φ); *malim* adiuerit. et p ut ins vδ. et in: in F. sim Δ₂ (*in exemplari uidetur fuisse* et^{si in} = etsi in). (inscius et om v.) 24 eum p mirificum ins P. auderem adgredere P. (auderem aggredi v): audirem adgrederer F. adire adgreder C. adire aggredederer G. imitater G'v. quispiam PFC. quospiam (o e corr) G. (om v): *correx*i; cf 250,10. 25 praenuntiatiuros v. prenuntiaturus PΔ₂. prenuntiaturum F. 26 g̃ntib; F. 27 ut p ergo ins Δ₂. subpletum P. (quod (ω) sicut uidimus ita suppletum est v.) 28 euangelium (a ex u, ut uid) F. 246,1 longum inc D. 2 per: pre P. piissimus D. piissimus ex possimus F. deus: dominus P.

16 Ps 33,7 ab omnibus angustiis eius saluauit eum M: ex (de Gall^{CUW} Heb) omnibus tribulationibus <eius Aug R Rom G C aug² Gall al> saluauit (saluum fecit Aug R. liberauit Rom G C aug² al) eum PSALT^{pr} M. Cf Ps 33,5 ex (de Heb) omnibus angustiis (tribulationibus Aug R A Rom G H Gall Med^{man}) meis liberauit (saluabit A. eruit Aug R. eripuit Rom G C m H Gall Moz Med^{man}) me. 16—17 2 Reg. 7,18 quis (Ambr VULG: quid Aug) ego sum dne. 18 Ps 45,11 exaltabor in gentibus VLP^l. VULG. GR (inter[in C]gentes CGHMed^{man}). Ps 33,4 magnificate dnm mecum et exaltemus (-ate M. exultemus A) nomen eius. Eccli 33,10 ex ipsis exaltauit (-bit A) et magnificauit ds. Cf Is 25,1 (Conf 3). 23 in nouissimis diebus: Act. 2,17, u Conf 40 (247,23 sq). 26 in testimonium omnibus gentibus ante finem mundi: cf Matth 24,14; u Conf 40 (247,21 sq).

- saepe liberauit et de periculis duodecim qua periclitata est anima mea, praeter insidias multas et *quae uerbis exprimere non ualeo*. Nec
 5 iniuriam legentibus faciam; sed Deum auctorem habeo, qui nouit omnia etiam antequam fiant, ut me pauperculum pupillum ideo tamen *responsum diuinum* creber admonere.
- 36 36. *Vnde mihi haec sapientia*, quae in me non erat, qui nec *nume-
 rum dierum noueram* neque Deum sapiebam? Vnde mihi postmodum
 10 donum tam magnum tam salubre Deum agnoscere uel diligere, sed ut patriam et parentes amitterem?
- 37 37. Et munera multa mihi offerebantur cum fletu et lacrimis et
 offendi illos, nec non contra uotum aliquantis de senioribus meis;
 sed gubernante Deo nullo modo consensi neque adqueui illis — non
 15 mea gratia, sed Deus qui uincit in me et resistit illis omnibus, ut ego ueneram ad Hibernas gentes euangelium praedicare et ab incre-
 dulis contumelias perferre, ut *audirem obprobrium peregrinationis
 meae*, et persecutiones multas *usque ad uincula* et ut darem
 ingenuitatem meam pro utilitate aliorum et, si dignus fuero,

11 cf VITA S. FURSEI 2: patriam parentesque relinquens. 16 cf SECUNDINUS 17 sq: electa Christi talenta uendit euangelica, quae Hibernas inter gentes cum usuris exigit.

3 <me> p saepe ins PAPEBROCH; potius in 3—4 scribendum animam meam, nisi obie-
 ctum subintellegi debet. et de: ex vδ. periculis xii D: duodecim periculis (φ). qua:
 quibus (φ). 4 expmere D. et p nec ins Pδ. (ne iniuriam v.) 5 deum: dum δ.
 (φ) (dominum v.) habeo om D. 6 ut — 22 indulgeret om D. me om P. 6—7 ideo
 tamen *vix sanum*. om v. idio<tam> tamen WHITE (1905); idiotam (1918); cf Act
 4,13. 7 creber admonere *non sine dubitatione scripsi*: creuerat monere P. creber
 admoneret F. (creberrime admoneret v.) creberrime admonuit Δ₂. 8 erat:
 erit P. 9 deum om P. 10 tam (1): tam P. (13 illos: illic v. aliquantos
 v.) 14 adqueui: adquesui F. 15 ui*cit G. (uicit v.) restitit Δ₂.
 (restiti v.) et a ut ins P. (ut ego: quatenus v. Hybernas v.) 17 audirem
 Pv: aurem (corr in haurirem G) δ. obproprium P. 18 persecutionis FC. a inge-
 nuitatem ins me PF, me et v. 19 utilitatem C.

246,4 quae uerbis exprimere non ualeo: cf Rom 8,26; u Conf 25 (243,15 sq).
 7 responsum diuinum: Rom 11,4. Cf Conf 17.21.29. 8 Matth 13,45 unde huic
 <omnis d. dgr> sapientia haec (om ff₂ R) VLP^l. VULG: sapientiam istam ek: ista
 sap. ff₁ Ambr. sap. tanta c(h). 8—9 Ps 38,5 notum fac mihi dne . . . numerum
 dierum meorum. 17 Eccli 29,30 et improprium peregrinationis non audies (καὶ
 ἀνείδισμὸν παροικίας οὐ [οἰκείας σου codd: emend Smend] μὴ ἀκούσης N^c.a. com-
 plures). 18 usque ad uincula: 2 Tim 2,9.

- 20 *promptus* sum ut etiam *animam meam* incunctanter et *libentissime* pro nomine eius et ibi opto *impendere* eam *usque ad mortem*, si Dominus mihi indulgeret,
- 38 (38) quia ualde *debitor sum* Deo, qui mihi tantam gratiam donauit ut populi multi per me in Deum renascerentur et postmodum con-
- 25 summarentur et ut clerici ubique illis ordinarentur ad plebem nuper uenientem ad credulitatem, quam sumpsit Dominus *ab extremis terrae*, sicut olim promiserat per prophetas suos: *Ad te gentes uenient ab extremis terrae et dicent: sicut falsa comparauerunt patres nostri idola*
- 247,1 *et non est in eis utilitas*; et iterum: *Posui te lumen in gentibus ut sis in salutem usque ad extremum terrae.*
- 39 39. Et ibi uolo *expectare promissum* ipsius, qui utique numquam

20 *promptus* v. p(ro)ptus F. proptus C. p(ro)mtus G. prumptus P. incunctantur F. (ω) 23 quia *inc* D. 24 renascantur (φ). et — consummarentur om D. consumarentur P. 25 ut *s l* F. illi *sequente rasura* G. *p ad rasura 2 litterarum in* G. 26 ueniente C. sumpsit D. 27 sicut — 28 terrae om v. promisserat D. profetas D. suos: suas|| (*nouum fol.*) suos F. ad — 28 dicent *p* 247,1 in eis utilitas D. te om P⁸. ueniunt D. ueniant P. 28 extremo P *nescio an recte, sed cf supra l. 26.* falso D. comparuerunt P. (*a s s inter r et u priore loco* G) δ. et a patres ins F. 247,1 utilitas in eis (φ). (*lumen in: in lucem v.*) 2 (*usque ad ultimum terrae v.*) 3 expectare: aspectare F. pollicetur C. (*corr in -etur*) G. polliciter F.

20—23 *centonem dicas ex libris sacris compositum*: *promptus* sum Rom 1,15 (*d e w Orig DW*: *promptum est c g VULG^{pl}*); *animam meam* cf Ioh 13,37; Phil 2,30; *libentissime* ... *impendere* eam cf 2 Cor 12,15 (*u Conf* 51); *usque ad mortem* Phil 2,8.30; *debitor sum* Rom 1,14. 26—27 *ab extremis terrae u infra*. 28 — 247,1 Ier 16,19 ad te gentes uenient ab extremis (—o m Aug^{ter}. ἀπ' ἐσχάτου LXX; sed Hier^{HEB}.LXX ab extremis, cf supra l 26) terrae et dicent: Quam (m Aug^{Faust}: quomodo Hier^{LXX}) falsa possederunt patres nostri idola (simulacra Aug^{Faust}) et non (nec m) est in eis (illis m) utilitas m Aug^{Faust}. Hier^{LXX} (uere mendacium possederunt patres nostri, uanitatem quae eis non profuit VULG.Hier^{HEB}. uere mendacia coluerunt patres nostri simulacra et non est in illis utilitas Aug[ConsEu.CiuDei]). *Patricius proxime accedit ad LXX* ὡς ψευδῆ ἐκτῆσαντο οἱ πατέρες ἡμῶν εἰδῶλα καὶ οὐκ ἔστιν ἐν αὐτοῖς ὠφέλημα. 247,1—2 Act 13,47 (*ex Is* 49,6) posui te lumen (*gig Cypr cum D^{*gr}*: in lumen *c d e VULG^{pl}*. in lucem *Is, unde dem Cypr Hier Gaud CW vg*) <in e DΘ> gentibus (*gentium vg, cf nationum Tert, cum GR^{pr} D. Is*) ut sis <illis D> in salutem usque ad extremum (*c dem Ambr Hier Vig VULG*; cf Epist 6: in extremum e Aug: ad ultimum *d gig*, cf Conf^v hic et codd omnes Conf 1.11). 3 Act 1,4 expectarent promissum (*e gig p**: promissionem VL^{cett} [m 2:p; s s:e].VULG) patris. 2 Petr 3,13 κατὰ (καὶ A) τὸ ἐπαγγέλημα (τὰ ἐπαγγέλματα AN al. sy^h) αὐτοῦ προσδοκῶμεν. et (secundum Aug) promissa (-am z) ipsius expectamus.

fallit, sicut in euangelio pollicetur: *Venient ab oriente et occidente*
 5 *et recumbent cum Abraam et Isaac et Iacob*,
 sicut credimus ab omni mundo uenturi sunt credentes.

- 40 40. Idcirco itaque oportet quidem bene et diligenter piscare, sicut
 Dominus praemonet et docet dicens: *Venite post me et faciam uos*
fieri piscatores hominum; et iterum dicit per prophetas: *Ecce*
 10 *mitto piscatores et uenatores multos, dicit Deus*, et cetera.
 Vnde autem ualde oportebat retia nostra tendere, ita ut *multi-*
tudo copiosa et turba Deo caperetur et ubique essent clerici qui

7.11 SECUNDINUS 13 sq: Dominus illum elegit ut doceret barbaras nationes ut (et
 A) piscaret per doctrinae retia; cf. ΜΥΙΤΗΧÚ I. 7: adesse tempus ut ueniret et euange-
 lico reti (rete A; euangelizaret in B) nationes feras et barbaras ad quas docendas
 misserat illum Deus <ut A> piscaret.

5 et ab austro et ab aquilone a et (1) ins D. et (1) om δ. abraham PΔ₂.
 habraham F. issac D. 7 itaque om vδ. quidem om D. diligentes F. diligen-
 ter D. piscari vG'. 8 praemonet: permonet P. et docet om (φ). 9 fieri om
 Pδ: incertum est quid Patricius scripserit, cf. apparatus biblicum. piscatores: pec-
 catores F. iterum F. dicit per prophetas om D. ego p ecce ins vδ. 10 piscatores:
 peccatores F. deus: dominus (φ). 11 oportebatur Pδ (-at G'). 12 copiosa D.
 et (2): ut vδ.

4—5 Matth 8,11 ἤξουσιν ἀπὸ ἀνατολῶν καὶ δυσμῶν (δυσμῶν καὶ ἀνατολῶν
 120.140) καὶ ἀνακλιθήσονται μετὰ Ἀβραάμ καὶ Ἰσαάκ καὶ Ἰακώβ ἐν τῇ βασιλείᾳ
 τῶν οὐρανῶν *Iust* [*Dial c Tryph* 76.120.140]. cf *RecClem. sy^{c.s.p.}Ephr.* multi uenient
 ab oriente et occidente et recumbent cum Abraham et Isaac et Iacob in regno caelo-
 rum *dim Cypr Aug^{Faust} Hier^{Ps} 46.* multi a uenient ab oriente et occidente uenient et
 recumbent *etc JP*: multi <ali k> ab oriente et <ab μ.D> occidente uenient et recum-
 bent (discumbent f. accumbent *Cypr^W(sem)*, cf *lectiones uariantes in Luc 13, 29*) cum
 Abraham et Isaac et Iacob in regno (-um *g₁ k*) caelorum *VetLat^{pl}. VULG^{om} cum GR.*
Conf^D interpolatus uidetur esse e Luc 13, 29 et uenient ab oriente et <ab i> occi-
 dente et <ab a d f l q r₂ a₂ μ M-TX* cum (BLR al)<sup>gr
 bent (recumbent *b—d e ff₂ i q δ gat Aug CEM-T.* discumbent a *f r₁. a₂*) in regno di.
Iren^{4,8,1} quoniam uenient ab oriente et occidente, ab aquilone et austro, et recum-
 bent cum Abraham et Isaac et Iacob in regno caelorum. Cf *Epist 18 (258,17—19).*
 8—9 Matth 4,19 (Marc 1,17) uenite post me et faciam uos fieri piscatores homi-
 num (fieri: ut sitis *in Mt k*; *in Mc a. om in Mt h m δ Aug Ambr Gaud*; *in Mc b r₁. In*
GR γενέσθαι in Mt add N^b D 33 157 multi al; *in Mc om fam^t. 13 69 28 48 108 al c sy^{s.p.}*).
 9—10 cf *Ier 16,16* ecce ego (*om w Ambr*) mittam (mitto *Ambr.* dismitto *w*) piscatores
 multos, dicit dns, et piscabuntur eos: et post haec mittam (post — mittam *om Ambr*)
 multos uenatores et uenabuntur eos. 11—12 *Luc 6,17* turba discipulorum eius et
 multitudo copiosa (ingens a f. magna c e. multa d) plebis (populi a c—f. nimis l).
 Cf *Luc 5,6* concluderunt piscium multitudinem copiosam (magnam a. multam d.
om e).</sup>

baptizarent et exhortarent populum indigentem et desiderantem,
sicut Dominus inquit in euangelio, ammonet et docet dicens: *Euntes*
15 *ergo nunc docete omnes gentes baptizantes eas in nomine Patris et Filii*
et Spiritus Sancti docentes eos obseruare omnia quaecumque mandauit
uobis: et ecce ego uobiscum sum omnibus diebus usque ad consumma-
tionem

saeculi; et iterum dicit: Euntes ergo in mundum uniuersum praedi-
cate euangelium omni creaturae; qui crediderit et baptizatus fuerit
20 *saluus erit; qui uero non crediderit condemnabitur; et iterum:*
Praedicabitur hoc euangelium regni in uniuerso mundo in testimonium
omnibus gentibus et tunc ueniet finis;
et item Dominus per prophetam praenuntiat inquit: *Et erit*

13 baptizarent D. exhortarent P. (-tur G) δ. (exhortarentur v.) populum:
p(ro)p(ter) P. indigentem D. dissiderantem D. 14 inquit om D. (rasura 5 litterarum p
dominus) G. admonet Pδ. (admonens et dicens v.) 15 ergo nunc om P. nunc
om vδ. baptizantes D. eas D: eos (φ). 16 docentes — 18 saeculi: reliqua usque
dicit saeculi D. obseruare: seruare Pv. (mandauit: dixero v.) 17 consumatione F.
18 dicit om D. (ergo om v.) 19 baptizatus D. 20 (qui — condemnabitur om v.)
(φ) 20 et — 248,5 uiui: reliqua sunt exempla D. 21 mondo P. 23 praenuntiat PF:
prenuntians vΔ₂.

14—18 Matth 28,19—20 euntes (ite d e m^{sem} Tert^{bapt.} 13 Cypr Aug Faust^{ter(e 4)}. Sac
Leon SacGel^{as}) ergo nunc (dim h₂ μ* gat DELQR Würzb' J': ergo c e f ff₁ 2 g₁ 2 l q t' δ
TEST^{mul} VULG pr codd celt ut supra. nunc a b d h m n aur Hil cum D^{gr}. Tat^{arab}) <et
e Tert^{praescr.} 20 (ire et docere). Cypr> docete omnes gentes baptizantes (tingentes Tert
Cypr) eas (e n Tert Aug^{bapt.} 6, 44, 85. SacLeon^{sem}. DR. om g₂: eos [VetLat. VULG]^{cell})
in nomine patris et filii et sps sci docentes eos obseruare (dim e g₂ h₂ δ μ gat Cypr
IulFirm DEPLQRX*: seruare [VetLat. VULG]^{cell}) omnia quaecumque mandauit (prae-
cepi e Cypr) uobis et ecce (om dim, ut uid) ego uobiscum sum (sum uobiscum d cum
D^{gr} sy^p) omnibus diebus usque ad (in Hil) consummationem saeculi (mundi Cypr). Hoc
loco Conf^D cum VULG^D ad uerbum concordat. 18—20 Marc 16,15—16 euntes (ite
c ff₂ gig q aur Ambr) in mundum uniuersum (uniuersum mundum t' D^{FO}. orbem uniuer-
sum o. uniuersum orbem c q. uniuersum om gat. cf Tert^{apol.} 21 [praedicandi per orbem].
mundum om ff₂) <et c ff₂ gig q Ambr> praedicate euangelium omni (uniuersae c ff₂
gig q aur). creaturae; <et ff₂ q Ambr> qui <autem c> crediderit et baptizatus fuerit
saluus erit, qui uero (autem o gat Gild. enim t') non crediderit condemnabitur (damna-
bitur c o q). Cf Epist 20 (259,4—5). 21—22 Matth 24,14 praedicabitur hoc euan-
gelium regni (meum l. om dim) in uniuerso orbe (in uniuerso mundo gig aur E. in
toto orbe dim δ. in toto mundo d. per totum orbem e h r_[1]. 2 μ Cypr Hil Beat) <ter-
rarum e t' Vict Beat: terrae Cypr> in testimonium omnibus gentibus et tunc ueniet
finis (d e f [h] q r₂ δ Cypr Vict Beat [GR τὸ τέλος]: consummatio [VetLat. VULG]^{cell})
<saeculi dim R>. 23 — 248,3 Act 2, 17—18 (Ioel 2,28—29) et (om d gig p TEST^{pl}
cum D^{gr}) erit in nouissimis diebus, dicit dns, effundam de spu meo (spm meum d

in nouissimis diebus, dicit Dominus; effundam de spiritu meo super omnem
 25 *carnem et prophetabunt filii uestri et filiae uestrae et iuuenes uestri*
 248,1 *uisiones uidebunt et seniores uestri somnia somniabunt et quidem super*
seruos meos et super ancillas meas in diebus illis effundam de spiritu meo
et prophetabunt; et in Osee dicit: Vocabo non plebem meam plebem
meam

- et non misericordiam consecutam misericordiam consecutam et erit in*
 5 *loco ubi dictum est: Non plebs mea uos, ibi uocabuntur filii Dei uiui.*
- 41 41. Vnde autem Hiberione qui numquam notitiam Dei habue-
 runt nisi idola et immunda usque nunc semper coluerunt quomodo
nuper facta est plebs Domini et filii Dei nuncupantur, filii Scottorum
 et filiae regulorum monachi et uirgines Christi esse uidentur?
- 42 10 42. Et etiam una benedicta Scotta genetiua nobilis pulcherrima
 adulta erat, quam ego baptizaui; et post paucos dies una causa uenit
 ad nos, insinuauit nobis responsum accepisse a nuntio Dei et
 monuit eam ut esset uirgo Christi et ipsa Deo proximaret: Deo

φ 25 uestri (1) *inc* V. iuuenes: filii Δ₂. iuuenes uestri *om* F. 248,1 somnia *bis* P.
 3 prophetabant P. in *om* PVF. osee V. osee F. osee C. oseae PG. plebem meam
semel tantum PC. 4 misericordiam consecutam *semel tantum* PC. 5 dictum est eis P.
 ω plebs C. 6 unde *inc* D. dei *om* D. habuerant φ. 7 nissi D. idula D. et *om* V.
 nunc *om* D. quomodo: quo C. 8 facta: facta PC. effecta V. perfecta FG; cf
 Luc. 1,17. nuncupatur Pδ. filii scottorum: filii scottorum F. scottorum: c *eras*
 in C. scorum D. 9 filiae: filii P. et (2) *om* F. esse: ipse (-e G) δ. 10 et — 251,13
 φ uestris *om* D. scotta benedicta V. s*otta (c *eras*) C. genitiua F. gentiua C. *om* V.
 11 adultera F. -a in ras G. 12 namque p insinuauit *ins* V. nuntio: nutu Δ₂.
 13 eam: etiam δ. esset: permaneret V. Christi *om* F. ipsa: sic V. *fortasse*:
 ipsa<m>; cf 4 Esdr 8,47.

Rebapt cum Ioel^{VULG} super (in *gig Iren*) omnem carnem et prophetabunt filii uestri
 et filiae uestrae et iuuenes uestri uisiones uidebunt et seniores uestri (*om e*) somnia
 somniabunt et quidem super seruos meos et super ancillas meas in diebus illis effundam
 de spu meo et prophetabunt. 248,3—5 Rom 9,25—26 sicut <et, cum GR, d f g Aug
 O> in (*om Aug cum B^{gr}*) Osee dicit: Vocabo non plebem meam plebem meam (non
 populum meum populum meum *Iren Cypr*) et non misericordiam consecutam mise-
 ricordiam consecutam (*pro* et non mis. — mis. consecutam [*d³ Tert Hier Pel VULG^{pl}*]:
 et non dilectam dilectam *d* e—g gig w TEST^{al}*. DF^{cl}*R. *ambas lectiones coniungunt*
*c dem Orig O*ZH²ΘUW*. cor uat. vg Monac Clm 4577) et erit in loco ubi dictum est
 eis (*pro* dictum est eis: dicitur eis e. uocabitur *Iren* D. uocabuntur *d g Cypr*): Non
 plebs mea uos, ibi uocabuntur filii di uiui. Cf Oseas 1,10 (*ubi eis p dictum est om*
w); 2,1.21 (24). 8 cf Luc 1,17 parare dno plebem perfectam (consummatam *d*. popu-
 lum perfectum *a* δ. populum compositum *e*).

- gratias, sexta ab hac die optime et audissime arripuit illud quod
 15 etiam omnes uirgines Dei ita hoc faciunt — non sponte patrum
 earum, sed et persecutiones patiuntur et impropria falsa a par-
 entibus suis et nihilominus plus augetur numerus (et de genere nostro
 qui ibi nati sunt nescimus numerum eorum) praeter uiduas et conti-
 nentes.
- 20 Sed ex illis maxime laborant quae seruitio detinentur: usque
 ad terrores et minas assidue perferunt; sed Dominus gratiam dedit
 multis ex ancillis suis, nam etsi uetantur tamen fortiter imitantur.
- 43 43. Vnde autem etsi uoluerō amittere illas et ut pergens in Brit-
 tanniis — et libentissime *paratus eram* quasi ad patriam et
 25 parentes; non id solum sed etiam usque ad Gallias uisitare fratres et
 ut uiderem faciem sanctorum Domini mei: scit Deus quod ego ualde
 optabam, sed *alligatus Spiritu*, qui mihi *protestatur* si hoc fecero, ut
 futurum reum me esse designat et timeo perdere laborem quem
 inchoaui, et non ego sed Christus Dominus, qui me imperauit ut
 249,1 uenirem esse cum illis residuum aetatis meae, *si Dominus*
uoluerit et custodierit me ab omni uia mala, ut non *peccem coram illo*;
 44 (44) spero autem hoc debueram, sed memet ipsum non credo

24—25 cf VITA S. FURSEI 2: dum patriam parentesque uisitare properaret.

14 sexta ex -o P. 15 ita hoc: similiter V. sponte: uoluntate V. sed et: immo V. et om C. 16 persecutionū F. persecutiones V. patuntur V. patiantur δ. impropria: inp(ro)pa F. apparentibus C. 17 nihilominus: nihil hominus PC. 20 ex illis *scripsi*: et (om P) illas (illa *sequente rasura* G) φ. et illae WARE. 21 ad om P. et: ut P. asidue V. assidue G. adsidue C. perferunt: perseuer F. persua-
 serunt Δ₂. 22 suis: meis δ. etsi uetantur: et (om Δ₂) siue tantum φ. *corr* PAPE-
 BROCH. 23 p uoluerō *ras ca 11 litt in* G. amittere V. imitare P. ut: ita P. bri-
 tanniis P. brithanniis V. 25 ad om Pδ. fratres ex fratribus, *ut uid*, G. 26 ut
 om P. 27 spiritus P. 28 futurum reum me: reum futurum V. perdere: pen-
 dere C. 29 inchoaui P. me: michi V. 249,1 esse cum *scripsi*: essem com P.
 essemq; cum V. esse mecum (meum F. m [1] *eras* G) δ. ressiduum F. 3 me-
 metipso F.

24 Ps 118,60 <prae-G>paratus sum PsV.Gall. Cf Conf 46 (249,22). 57 (252,6).
 27 Act 20,22 alligatus (uinctus e [gig] ego (om S*. ego uinctus *gig cum* [DHLP]^{gr})
 spu. Cf Epist 10 (256,8). Act 20,23 nisi quod sps scs per omnes ciuitates mihi pro-
 testatur (*Lucif R* vg*: protestatur mihi [*VetLat. VULG*]^{ceff}). 249,1—2 Iac 4,15 si
 dns <ihs xps I> uoluerit. 2 Luc 15,18 peccauī ... coram te.

- quamdiu fuero in hoc corpore mortis*, quia fortis est qui cotidie nititur
 5 subuertere me a fide et praeposita castitate religionis non fictae usque
 in finem uitae meae Christo Domino meo, sed *caro inimica* semper
 trahit ad mortem, id est ad inlecebras inlicitate perficiendas;
 et *scio ex parte* quare uitam perfectam ego non egi sicut et ceteri
 credentes, sed confiteor Domino meo, et non erubesco in conspectu
 10 ipsius, *quia non mentior*, ex quo cognoui eum *a iuuentute mea* creuit
 in me amor Dei et timor ipsius, *et usque nunc* fauente Domino *fidem*
seruauit.
- 45 45. Rideat autem et insultet qui uoluerit, ego non silebo neque
 abscondo signa et mirabilia quae mihi a Domino monstrata sunt
 15 ante multos annos quam fierent, quasi qui nouit omnia etiam *ante*
tempora saecularia.
- 46 46. Vnde autem debueram sine cessatione Deo gratias agere, qui
 saepe indulsit insipientiae meae neglegentiae meae et de loco non
 in uno quoque ut non mihi uehementer irasceretur, qui adiutor datus
 20 sum et non cito adqueui secundum quod mihi ostensum fuerat et

4 corpe V. nitantur P. 5 subuertitur P. praeposita: proposita Δ₂. ficta P.
 6 domino: deo G. 7 ad om P. illecebras VG. inlicitate: in infelicitate V. in-
 licite (e *in ras aliquot litt*) G. 8 quare *scripsi*: qua re φ. uitam — egi: ego uitam
 perfectam non didici V. et ceteri: ecceteri (e [3] *ex x?*) P. 9 in conspectu: in-
 spectu F. 10 ipsius: eius V. 13 silebo: similabo P. 14 quae: quem F. mon-
 strata: ministrata (i e munstrata) V8. 15 fierent: fuerunt (-ant G) 8. 16 tem-
 pora *ex -e, ut uid*, F. 17 autem: ego quidem V. debuero 8. 18 et a negle-
 gentiae *ins* V. et om P. 19 non om P. irascetur C. 20 et (1): ut P. quod:
 quid F.

4 2 Petr 1,13 quamdiu sum in hoc corpore (*h*: tabernaculo I [z] VULG). Rom
 7,24 quis me liberabit de corpore mortis huius? Cf Conf 20 (241,15). 6 caro ini-
 mica: cf Rom 8,7 sapientia carnis inimica (*w TEST^{mul}*. BCDHFHOKLMORTUVWZ
vg: inimicitia c—g A al) est in dm. 8 scio ex parte: cf 1 Cor. 13,9 ex parte enim
 scimus (*Iren^{4,9,2}*: cognoscimus *VetLat^{cett}*. VULG). 10 Gal 1,20 quia non mentior.
 Cf Conf 31.54. Ps 70,17 docuisti me a (*H Rom Gall^{Rvg} Med^{man} Moz*. cf *Heb*: ex
Ps V Gall^C. 8k GR) iuuentute mea et usque nunc pronuntiabo mirabilia tua. a iuuen-
 tute mea: Ps 87,16 (ab adulescentia *Heb*). Cf Conf 48 (250,3—4). 11—12 2 Tim 4,7
 fidem seruauit. 15—16 qui nouit omnia ante tempora saecularia: cf Act 15,18
 notum a saeculo est dno opus suum. ante tempora saecularia: 2 Tim 1,9 (aeterna
TEST. D. saecularia uel aeterna g); Tit 1,2 (aeterna *d e. TEST*. D. saecularia uel
 aeterna g).

sicut *Spiritus suggererat*, et *misertus est* mihi Dominus in *milia milium*, quia uidit in me quod *paratus eram*, sed quod mihi pro his nesciebam de statu meo quid facerem, quia multi hanc legationem prohibebant, etiam inter se ipsos pos tergum meum narrabant et
 25 dicebant: 'Iste quare se mittit in periculo inter hostes qui Deum non nouerunt?' — non ut causa malitiae, sed non sapiebat illis, sicut et ego ipse testor, intellegi propter rusticitatem meam — et non cito agnoui gratiam quae tunc erat in me; nunc mihi sapit quod ante debueram.

47 30 47. Nunc ergo simpliciter insinuauī fratribus et conseruis meis qui mihi crediderunt propter quod *praedixi et praedico* ad roborandam et confirmandam fidem uestram. Vtinam ut et uos imitemini maiora et
 250,1 potiora faciatis! Hoc erit gloria mea, quia *filius sapiens gloria patris est*.

48 48. Vos scitis et Deus qualiter inter uos conuersatus sum *a iuuentute mea* in fide ueritatis *et in sinceritate cordis*. Etiam ad gentes
 5 illas inter quas habito, ego fidem illis praestauī et praestabo. Deus scit *neminem* illorum *circumueni*, nec cogito, propter Deum et

21 sicut spiritus: spiritus nichilominus V. mihi: mei V. 22 uidet P. pro: per PVFC. p(ro) ex p G'(?). 23 de statu: detestatu F. multe P. hanc: hac P. 24 prohibebam P. phibebant C. postergum PC. post^{tergū} G. post tergum VF. meum: in eum P. narrabam P. 25 dicebam P. mitit V. periculum Vδ. 26 causam P. malitiae: militiae P. 27 testor: testator F a c. intellegi G. intellexi F. intellige GROSJEAN. 28 in me: ut me *ut vid*, F. sapit: capit δ. 29 *p ante ras in* G 30 insinuauī: insuaui (*corr in* insinuauī G) δ. 31 roborandam *ex -um* P. roboran||randam F. 32 uos: nos P. imitemini V. imitemini F. 1 hoc: hęc V. 3 scitis: citis P. inter — sum: conuersatus sum inter uos V. inter: apud Δ₂. inter s 1 F. 4 in (1): et δ. in (2) om VC. 5 quos P; cf *uar lect ad* 248,14; 252,1. ego habito V. praestauī: prestiti V. 6 nemē F.

21 Ioh 14,26 (sps) suggeret (c ff₂ h [h₂] l t' δ [μ] *aur gat* VULG: *VetLat alii alia*) uobis omnia. 21—22 misertus est mihi dns in milia milium: cf Ex 20,6 faciens misericordiam in milia <milium *Fulg Quaest VetNouiTest*>; Apoc 5,11 erat numerus eorum millia millium 22 Ps 118,60 <prae- G> paratus sum *Ps VGall*. Cf Conf 43 (248,24). 57 (252,6). 31 2 Cor 13,2 praedixi et praedico. 1—2 Prou 10,1. 15,20 filius sapiens laetificat (oblectat *codSPauli* [Mone, *De libris palimpsestis* 50]. εὐφραίνει LXX) patrem m^{αμ} VULG. Cf Prou 17,6 gloria filiorum patres eorum. Eccli 3,13 gloria hominis ex honore patris sui. 3—4 1 Reg 12,2 conuersatus <sum *m Iren*> coram uobis (uos m^{Pr} V^{2v}: in conspectu uestro *Iren*) a iuuentute (ab adulescentia VULG. a prima aetate *Iren*) mea *m Iren* VULG. a iuuentute mea: Ps 70,17; 87,16. Cf Conf 44 (249,10). 4 2 Cor 1,12 in simplicitate (sanctitate r) cordis et sinceritate di. 6 cf 2 Cor 7,2 neminem circumuenimus.

ecclesiam ipsius, ne *excitem* illis et nobis omnibus *persecutionem* et ne per me blasphemaretur nomen Domini; quia scriptum est: *Vae homini per quem nomen Domini blasphematur.*

49 10 49. Nam *etsi imperitus sum in omnibus* tamen conatus sum quipiam seruare me etiam et fratribus Christianis et uirginibus Christi et mulieribus religiosis, quae mihi ultronea munuscula donabant et super altare iactabant ex ornamentis suis et iterum reddebam illis et aduersus me scandalizabantur cur hoc faciebam; sed ego propter spem perennitatis, ut me in omnibus caute propterea conseruarem, ita ut <non> me in aliquo titulo infideli caperent uel ministerium seruitutis

meae nec etiam in minimo incredulis locum darem infamare siue detractare.

50 50. Forte autem quando baptizaui tot milia hominum sperauerim ab aliquo illorum uel dimidio scriptulae? *Dicite mihi et reddam uobis.* Aut quando ordinauit ubique Dominus clericos per modicitatem meam et ministerium gratis distribui illis, si poposci ab aliquo

7 ne: nec P. 8 blasphemetur V. 10 sum: ut P. in omnibus: nominibus VFC. 11 seruare me: seruarem P. et (1) *om* V. 12 religiosis V. ultronea: ultro P. 13 altere V. hornamentis V. reddebant F. 14 aduersum G. quur P. hoc: ego G. 15 spem perennitatis: spem perhennitatis VG. semp ennitatis P. spm perennitatis F. spere perennitatis C. 16 ita ut *om* P. <non> *inserui.* aliquo: alio P. meo *p* titulo *ins* P. infideles V. <non> caperent WARE. <non> ca(r)perent PAPEBROCH. 17 minimis V. dare P. darē FG. 18 detractare G'. detractarent P. 20 aliquā F. dimedio C. dimidium PG'. 21 clericos: cleros P. modicitatem: mollicitatem P. 22 si poposci *om* P.

7 cf Act 13,50 excitauerunt (*c VULG*: suscitauerunt *d e gig*) persecutionem (seditionem A) in Paulum. 8—9 Matth 18,7 uae <illi e ff₁ Aug Hier^{in loc} cum Wgr> homini <illi, cum (BEGH al)^{gr}, a—c f ff₂ l n q δ μ (s l) gat Lucif Hil HLQRT vg> per quem scandalum uenit. Rom 2,24 nomen enim di (dni Aug^{Spec}. DG) per uos blasphematur. *Lectio similiter conflata inuenitur in Max (ap Sab)*: uae illi homini per quem nomen dni blasphematur. 10 2 Cor 11,6 nam (*c gig KLPVW cor uat. vg: om [VelLat. VULG]^{cell} etsi imperitus <sum, cum (D*E)^{gr}, c—e g gig t Hier Prisc CDT. cor uat**) sermone, sed non scientia; in omnibus autem manifestatus sum uobis. 20—21 et 23—24 1 Reg 12,3 respondete contra me (mihi Iren) ... si ex (de Iren) alicuius manu accepi propitiationem (munus *legion*. pro exoratione *m*) uel (aut *legion*) calciamentum (corrigiam calciamentorum *m*) <et abscondam oculos meos in quo *legion*, cf HEX ('Αλλος). HEB> dicite (dicitis *legion*. respondete TEST^{alq} ap Sab) aduersus (-um *legion*) me et reddam uobis *VetLat (m Iren legion^{mq})*: loquimini de me

illorum uel pretium uel *calciamenti* mei, *dicite aduersus me et reddam uobis.*

51 25 Magis (51) ego *impendi* pro uobis ut me *caperent*, et inter uos et ubique

pergebam causa uestra in multis periculis etiam usque ad exteras partes, ubi nemo ultra erat et ubi numquam aliquis peruenerat qui baptizaret aut clericos ordinaret aut populum consummaret: donante Domino diligenter et libentissime pro salute uestra omnia <...> generaui.

52 30 52. Interim praemia dabam regibus praeter quod dabam mercedem filiis ipsorum qui mecum ambulant, et nihilominus comprehenderunt me cum comitibus meis et illa die audissime cupiebant interficere me, sed tempus nondum uenerat, et omnia quaecumque nobiscum inuenerunt rapuerunt illud et me ipsum ferro uinxerunt, et quartodecimo die absoluit me Dominus de potestate eorum et quicquid nostrum fuit redditum est nobis propter Deum et *necessarios amicos* quos ante praeuidimus.

53 53. Vos autem experti estis quantum ego erogauī illis qui iudica-

250,30—251,4 GUILIELMUS MALMESB. De uita s. Patricii lib I (Lelandi Collectanea II. 237): Nec non et praemia dabam regibus et filiis eorum, qui propter securitatem meam mecum ambulabant. Sed tamen ipsi me audissime uolebant interficere, et quicquid inuenerunt nobiscum rapuerunt et me ferro uinxerunt. Quartodecimo autem die absoluit me Dominus de manibus eorum. 251,7—10 TÍRECHÁN 310,1—7 Stokes: foedus pepigerunt ... Patricius et filii Amolngid ... et extendit Patricius

23 camenti P. aduersus me: michi V. 24 uobis. Magis *recte distinxit* WARE 25 et *a* ego *ins* P. pro *om* V. caperet *φ. corr* PAPEBROCH. 26 ad exteras: ad (*d e corr* F) extras (*e s r* G) *δ*. ad dextras P. 27 qui: quid P. 28 consummaret: in fide confirmaret V. 29 *lacunam p* omnia *indicaui*. generaui: generari F. gessi V. 30 interhim (*h eras*) F. regibus dabam V. praeter: propter *δ*. mercedem dabam V. 31 nihilominus: nihilominum P. nihil *δ*. 251,1 me cum: me tunc cum V. mecum et P. *cō*mitibus F. audisse V. audissime P. cupiebam *δ*. 2 nondum: nundum P. *que* cumq; G. 3 illa *ex* -ud G. *om* V. me ipsum: meipso F. me C. uixerunt VF. *n s s* P. 4 xiiii. P. de: a V. 5 reditum V. est: esset P. 7 quatum C. *p* ego *ras 3 litt* in G. iudicabant: indicabant *δ*.

... si de manu cuiusquam munus accepi: et contemnam illud hodie restituumque uobis *VULG.Gild.* 25 2 Cor 12,15 ego autem libentissime (cf *l* 29) impendam ... pro animabus uestris. Cf Conf 53 (251,11—13). 2 Cor 7,2 capite nos. 5—6 Act 10,24 necessariis amicis.

bant *per omnes regiones* quos ego frequentius uisitabam. Censeo enim non minimum quam pretium quindecim hominum distribui illis, ita
 10 ut me *fruamini* et ego *uobis* semper *fruar* in Deum. Non me paenitet nec satis est mihi: adhuc *impendo et superimpendam*; potens est Dominus ut det mihi postmodum ut *meipsum impendar pro animabus uestris*.

54 54. Ecce *testem Deum inuoco in animam meam quia non mentior*:
 15 neque ut sit *occasio adulationis* uel *auaritiae* scripserim uobis neque ut honorem spero ab aliquo uestro; sufficit enim honor qui nondum uidetur sed corde creditur; *fidelis* autem *qui promisit: numquam mentitur*.

55 55. Sed uideo iam *in praesenti saeculo* me supra modum exaltatum
 20 a Domino, et non eram dignus neque talis ut hoc mihi praestaret, dum scio certissime quod mihi melius conuenit paupertas et calamitas quam diuitiae et diliciae (sed et *Christus Dominus pauper* fuit

etiam pretium .xu. animarum hominum, ut in scriptione sua adfirmat, de argento et auro, ut nullus malorum hominum impederet eos in uia recta transeuntes totam Hiberniam.

9 quam: quod, *ut uid (eras)* G. xv P. 10 fruamini (*ex -emini, ut uid*) F. deo P. 11 potens *ex* poteris, *ut uid*, F. est (2): enim V. 12 impendat P. impendam
 15 ex -at, *ut uid*, G. 14 ecce *inc* D. 15 occasio Pδ. occasio D: causa V. adulationis — scripserim *om* D. adolationis P. 16 spero — uestro: sperarem (serarem F) uestrum φ. mihi *p* enim *ins* PVFG. 17 nondum — promisit *om* D. nondum: nundum P. 18 numquam: non D. 19 exaltatum: exultatum δ. exaltatus sum D. 20 michi hoc V. 21 certissime quod mihi *om* D. cū|uenit P. 22 a quam *ras 2 litt in* G. diuitiae et diliciae: dilicie et diuicie V. deliciae et diuitiae G'. dilitias et diuitias Pδ. et (2) *om* P. 22—23 pro nobis fuit pauper V.

8 per omnes regiones 2 Esdr 11,25; cf Gen41,34. 10 cf Rom 15,24 si uobis ... fruius fuero. 11—13 2 Cor 12,15 ego autem libentissime impendam <et superinpendam *d e Ambrst cum* (D*E)gr> et impendar ([*d e*] *g r*[?]) Aug Ambrst: superinpendar cf VULG) ipse pro animabus uestris. Cf Conf 51 (250,25). 14 2 Cor 1,23 testem dm inuoco (facio Augsem) in animam meam, quod ... Gal 1,20 ecce coram deo quia non mentior. Cf Conf 31.44. 15 cf 1 Thess 2,5 neque enim aliquando fuimus in sermone adulationis ... neque in occasione auaritiae. 17—18 Heb 10,23 fidelis enim (*om r*) <est omnes pr *d e Sed S*> qui promisit (*r Sed*: repromisit VetLac^{ceft}. VULG). Tit 1,2 quam promisit qui non mentitur (non mendax *d e g TEST*. ἀψευδής GR) ds. 19 cf Gal 1,4 de praesenti saeculo. 22—23 2 Cor 8,9 scitis enim gratiam dni nostri ihu xpi quoniam pro nobis (*Hier Cassd cum* [CKL al]gr: propter uos Vet

pro nobis, ego uero miser et infelix etsi opes uoluero iam non habeo, *neque me ipsum iudico*), quia cotidie spero aut inter-
 25 nicionem aut circumueniri aut redigi in seruitutem siue occasio
 cuiuslibet; *sed nihil horum uereor* propter promissa caelorum,
 quia iactaui meipsum in manus Dei omnipotentis, qui ubique
 dominatur, sicut propheta dicit: *Iacta cogitatum tuum in Deum et*
ipse te enutriet.

56 30 56. Ecce nunc *commendo animam meam fidelissimo Deo meo*, *pro*
 252,1 *quo legationem fungor* in ignobilitate mea, *sed quia personam non accipit*
 et elegit me ad hoc officium ut *unus essem de suis minimis* minister.

57 57. Vnde autem *retribuam illi pro omnibus quae retribuit mihi*.
 Sed quid dicam uel quid promittam Domino meo, quia nihil ualeo
 5 nisi ipse mihi dederit? Sed *scrutator corda et renes* quia satis et nimis

23 uero om δ. infelix F. 24 quotidie D. spero: sperno Δ₂. internicionem
 VF. internicionem P. occasio D. occasio (nē s l qdd) G. 26 sed — 253,9 euaseram
 φ om D. 27 qui: quia VFC. qui sequente ras G. 28 dicit: ait V. 30 commendo nunc G.
 P 252: *lineae huius paginae perperam numerantur in editione Whitei*. 1 quo:
 qua P. legatione (uirgula, ut uid, erasa) G. 2 ad: de P. ministris P. 3 omi-
 bus P. quae: qui P. retribuam δ. retribuet P. 4 ualeo: uideo δ. 5 scrutatur
 P. scrutabor δ.

Lat^{cell}. VULG) pauper (*de gr Aug Vig Ambrst Ambr Hier al: egenus c f Vig^{sem}*. [egens
 W] *VULG*) factus est. (pauper pro uobis *Aug^V. 176.*) 24 1 Cor 4,3 *neque <ego*
Aug.A> me ipsum iudico (diudico *Aug Ambr*). 26 Act 20,24 *sed nihil horum (illo-*
rum dem) uereor c dem gig VULG. (*VetLat alii alia*, cf GR). 28—29 Ps 54,23 *iacta*
in dm (dnm Hil^RPTE. do aug¹ Moz^{Pr}. G Med dno G. [p cogitatum tuum] MissRom)
cogitatum tuum (cogitationem tuam Fulg Ambr Leo Hil) et ipse te enutriet (nutriet
 G) *Ambr Rom V Hil G C (carn) aug¹ Moz Med (Fulg Leo): iacta super (in Aug) dnm*
curam tuam et ipse te enutriet (nutriet Gall^R) Aug R Gall; cf *iecta in dm curam*
tuam usque enutriet A. proice super (supra E) dnm caritatem tuam et ipse enutriet
te (te enutriet E) Heb. relinque super dnm desideria tua et ipse enutriet te M. abice
... sollicitudinem ... pascet Aug. c. Adim. 4. 30 1 Petr 4,19 *fideli creatori com-*
mandant animas suas. Cf Ps 30,6; Luc 23,46 (ubi Hier^{tr} [p 47,10—11 Morin] legit:
in manus tuas, pater, commendo animam meam). 30 — 252,1 Eph 6,20 *pro quo*
*legatione (-em FHΘ*LRZ) fungor (-o O). Cf Epist 5 (255,2).* 1 Deut 10,17
 dns ... qui personam non accipit. Gal 2,6 *ds personam hominis non accipit.*
 2 Matth 25,40 *uni de (dim f g₂ h₂ t' aur gal VULG^{pl}: ex ff₁ g₁ h l r_{1,2} δ μ Aug Hil*
Ambrst Faust MissRom QRTWΔ vg) his (om g₁ h l r_{1,2} μ Aug^{semp}) fratribus (om ff₁, [2]
Aug Hil Gaud Ben Faust MissRom) meis minimis (aliis aliter uariantibus). 3 Ps
 115,12 *quid retribuam (reddam Heb) dno pro (de Cypr^{Pr} CR^v) omnibus quae retribuit*
(-et G: praestitit Moz²) mihi? 5 Ps 7,10 *scrutans corda et renes (probator cordis*
et renum Heb, cf HEX[Θ']). Apoc 2,23 scrutans renes et corda (qui scrutor gig [m]
t Beat scrutator renis et cordis uel sim. Afri Ambr. scrutatur renes et corda Iren).

cupio et *paratus eram* ut donaret mihi *bibere calicem* eius, sicut indulsit et ceteris amantibus se.

- 58 58. Quapropter non contingat mihi a Deo meo ut numquam amittam *plebem* suam *quam adquisiuit* in ultimis terrae. Oro Deum
10 ut det mihi perseuerantiam et dignetur ut reddam illi testem fidelem usque ad transitum meum propter Deum meum,
59 (59) et si aliquid boni umquam imitatus sum propter Deum meum, quem diligo, peto illi det mihi ut cum illis proselitis et captiuis pro nomine suo effundam sanguinem meum, etsi ipsam etiam caream
15 sepulturam aut miserissime cadauer per singula membra diuidatur canibus aut bestiis asperis aut *uolucres caeli comederent illud*. Certissime reor, si mihi hoc incurrisset, lucratus sum animam cum corpore meo, quia *sine ulla dubitatione* in die illa *resurgemus* in claritate solis, hoc est *in gloria* Christi Iesu redemptoris nostri,
20 quasi *filiū Dei* uiui et *coheredes Christi* et *conformes futuri imaginis*

10—11 cf SECUNDINUS 73: testis Domini fidelis in lege catholica.

6 donaret et mihi P. 7 et om δ. 8 quia (qua ex quia, ut uid, G') propter δ. contingunt Vδ. deo: dño V. numquam: umquam P. 9 amittam P. suam: meam C*. adq; siuit F. ergo p oro ins V. 10 perseuerantiam F. illi <me> PAPERBROCH. 10—11 testem fidelem: testimonium fidele WHITE². 12 aliquit P. umquam imitatus (inimitatus F) sum: inuitatus sum unquam V. 13 igitur p peto ins V. (φ) illi: illū (ū in ras) G. illi — 257,23 exporta- *folium excidit in* V. (ut a det ins v.) 14 ipse (e in ras) G. ipsum C. (ipsa v.) 15 sepultura vG. miserrissime F. miserrime G. (miserrime v.) mēbra C. 16 aspsis C. comederem P. comederunt F. comederint (ex -unt) G. (comedant v.) 17 incurrisset Pδ. curae sit v. occurrisset HITCHCOCK. 18 resurgimus P. 19 gloriam P. 20 futuri P: futurae δ. creaturae v.

6 paratus eram: cf Ps 118,60 (ū Conf 43 [248,24]. 46 [249,22]). Matth 20,22 bibere calicem (calicem bibere d QR). 9 Is 43,21 plebem meam quam acquisiui Cypr. populum meum quem <mihi m> acquisiui m Iren Hier^{LXX} cum LXX²⁶. al, cf crypt: populum istum formaui mihi VULG.HEB. 16 Luc 8,5 uolucres (uolatilia d D) caeli (c f h h₂ r_{1,2} δ aur gat VULG: om a b d e ff₂ l q μ cum D^{gr}) comederunt illud (illud comederunt b ff₂ [l] q μ consumpserunt illud e). 18 Ruth 3,13 sine (absque vg) ulla dubitatione (AugConf.X.20). 18—19 1 Cor 15,43 <re-Aug>surget (c r TEST^{pl}. VULGAD^{al}: <re-Tert Cypr Hil>surgit d e f g m TEST^{alq}. VULG^{BCF} al) in gloria. 20 filii di . . . coheredes xpi: Rom 8,16.17. Cf Conf 4 (236,21). 20—21 Rom 8,29 conformes fieri (om Aug Sed) imaginis (-i H^cΘ*) filii eius (sui t Faust). Cf Iren V. 36,2: libe-

21.22 *ipsius; quoniam ex ipso et per ipsum et in ipso regnaturi sumus.*

- 60 60. Nam sol iste quem uidemus <ipso> iubente propter nos cotidie oritur, sed numquam regnabit neque permanebit splendor eius, sed et
 25 omnes qui adorant eum in poenam miseri male deuenient; nos autem, qui credimus et adoramus solem uerum Christum, qui numquam
 253,1 interibit, neque *qui fecerit uoluntatem* ipsius, sed *manebit in aeternum quomodo et Christus manet in aeternum*, qui regnat cum Deo Patre omnipotente et cum Spiritu Sancto ante saecula et nunc et per omnia saecula saeculorum, Amen.
- 61 5 61. Ecce iterum iterumque breuiter exponam uerba confessionis meae. *Testificor* in ueritate et in *exultatione cordis coram Deo et sanctis angelis eius* quia numquam habui aliquam occasionem praeter euangelium et promissa illius ut umquam redirem ad gentem illam unde prius uix euaseram.

21.22 CYPRIAN De orat. dominica 13: in illo regnaturi sumus.

21.22 quoniam — sumus: quam ex ipso regnaturi sumus P. om F. (quoniam ex ipso et per ipsum et in ipso sunt omnia: ipsi gloria in saecula saeculorum amen. In illo enim regnaturi sumus v.) 23 quem: quam P. <ipso> *suppleui*. dō a iubente s s G. (illo ins v.) cottidie F. 24 et a neque ins C. 26 qui (1) eras, ut uid, in G. uerōm F. 1 fecerit Pv: fecerat (corr in -it G') δ. 2 quomodo — aeternum om C. 2 manet v. permanet P. manebit F. permanebit G. 3 patri omnipotenti P. et (3) om P. 5 iterum iterumque: iterumqui P. (iterum atque iterum v.) 6 testificabor P. 7 quia v: qui Pδ. praeter: propter G. 8 illius: ipsius P. umquam: numquam P. redirem ad gentem v: redderem (-e P) agentem (-e P) Pδ. 9 unde v: unde autem Pδ.

ram futuram creaturam . . . in libertatem gloriae filiorum di . . . ut fiat secundum imaginem di; *an scripsit Patricius* conformes futurae creaturae imaginis ipsius? 21—22 Rom 11,36 quoniam ex ipso et per ipsum et in ipso (in ipsum *d e m* [Iren]. in ipsum uel o:g) sunt omnia: ipsi gloria in saecula saeculorum amen. 1—2 1 Ioh 2,17 qui autem (*om Pel*) fecerit (*Cypr Pel Lucif Clem^{lat} Aug HilArel*: facit VL.VULG) uoluntatem di manet (manet et manebit *Cypr*. permanet *Clem^{lat}*, permanebit *h z*) in aeternum <quomodo (sicut *t Aug Pel HilArel*) et (*om Cypr* [Test. III.12] *LBv Pel^{BV}*) ds (ipse *Pel^{HG}*. ipse et ds *Cypr Aug*. ille *HilArel TEST^{al}*) manet in aeternum *t Cypr Aug Pel Lucif HilArel*, ex Ioh 12,34>. Ps 88,37 semen eius in aeternum (sempiternum *Heb*) manebit (manet *Aug* [CiuDei XVII.9] *pr abpv*. erit M). 6—7 2 Tim 4,1 testificor (testor *Ambrst*. testor uel adiuro *g*) coram do. 1 Tim 5,21 testor (testificor *AugSpec (S) Cassd BZ**) coram do et electis (*om Hil Cassd*) angelis <eius *dem diu^c TEST. BF^cLO^sS cum GR^{alq}*>; *r prorsus differt*. Cf Matth 16,27 cum <sanctis d. (p suis) b. (in mg, del suis) μ, cf C^{gr}> angelis suis (eius a). Marc 8,38 cum angelis sanctis (sanctis angelis ff₂ μ *aur*. angelis suis *dim l KV cum F^{gr}*). 6 Ps 118,111 exultatio (*gaudium Heb*) cordis.

62 10 62. Sed precor credentibus et timentibus Deum, quicumque dignatus fuerit inspicere uel recipere hanc scripturam quam Patricius peccator indoctus scilicet Hiberione conscripsit, ut nemo umquam dicat quod mea ignorantia, si aliquid pusillum egi uel demonstra- uerim secundum Dei placitum, sed arbitramini et uerissime credatur 15 quod *donum Dei* fuisset. Et haec est confessio mea antequam moriar.

LIBER SECVNDVS: <EPISTOLA AD MILITES COROTICI.>

254,1 1. Patricius peccator indoctus scilicet Hiberione constitutus episcopum me esse fateor. Certissime reor a Deo *accepi id quod sum*. Inter barbaras itaque gentes habito proselitus et profuga ob amorem Dei; testis est ille si ita est. Non quod optabam tam dure et tam 5 aspere aliquid ex ore meo effundere; sed cogor zelo Dei, et ueritas Christi excitauit, pro dilectione proximorum atque filiorum, pro quibus *tradidi patriam et parentes et animam meam usque ad mortem*.

2 cf SECUNDINUS 11: cuiusque apostolatam a Deo sortitus est. 6—7 cf SECUNDINUS 60: pro qua (*ie* plebe sua) ad Christi exemplum suam tradit animam.

(ω) 10 sed *inc* D. 12 indoctus: et doctus P. (Hyberione v.) 13 pussillum D. egi: ego δ. 14 secundum: sc̄m Δ₂. dei placitum *om* D. (placitum Dei v.) creditur F. (credatis v.) 15 donum *om* Pδ. (donum dei: deus v.) hucusque uolumen quod patricius manu conscripsit sua: septima decima martii die translatus est patricius ad caelos D. EXPLICIT LIBER PRIMUS INCIPIT SECUNDUS F. EXPLICIT LIBER .I. INCIPIT (LĪB̄ *add* G) .II. Δ₂.

(φ) *Inscriptio deest; sed cf subscriptionem Confessionis in δ et ipsius scriptoris uerba*, 254,11. Epistola ad milites Corotici regis Aloo (*ex capitulis Muirchú*, LA 20 vα 1—2) J. GWYNN. 1 *p* indoctus *ras ca 6 litt* in G. (Hyberione v.) a deo *a* constitutus *ins* P. constitutum G. (episcopus, *omissis quae sequuntur* me esse fateor, v.) 2 reor a *om* P. 3 barbaros (o *ex a*) G. (itaque: utique v.) gentes v; *om* Pδ. prosilitis P. ab amore (ē G) PG. 4 ille *s l* G. obtabam Δ₂. 5 ueritatis vδ. 6 me *p* excitauit *s s* G. (excitatus v.) 7 *q̄b*; *ex q*; *b*; *ut uid*, F. animam meam: animeam C.

15 donum di: Ioh 4,10. Cf Conf 14.33.

2 1 Cor 15,10 gratia autem Dei sum id quod sum. Cf 1 Cor 4,7 quid autem habes quod non accepisti? 7 Phil 2,30 usque ad mortem accessit tradens animam suam (parabolatus est de anima sua *deg* [GR παραβόλευσάμενος τῇ ψυχῇ]. cf in incertum tradens animam suam D). Cf Ioh 13,37 u Conf 37 (246,20—21).

Si dignus sum, uiuo Deo meo docere gentes etsi contempnor aliquibus.

- 2 10 2. Manu mea scripsi atque condidi uerba ista danda et tradenda, militibus mittenda Corotici, non dico ciuibus meis neque ciuibus sanctorum Romanorum sed ciuibus daemoniorum, ob mala opera ipso-

rum. Ritu hostili in morte uiuunt, socii Scottorum atque Pictorum †apostatarumque†. Sanguilentos sanguinare de sanguine innocentium Christi-

- 15 anorum, quos ego in numero Deo genui atque in Christo confirmaui!

- 3 3. Postera die qua crismati neophyti in ueste candida — flagrabat in fronte ipsorum dum crudeliter trucidati atque mactati gladio supradictis — misi epistolam cum sancto presbytero quem ego ex infantia doçui, cum clericis, ut nobis aliquid indulgerent de praeda uel

- 20 de captiuis baptizatis quos ceperunt: cachinnos fecerunt de illis.

- 4 4. Idcirco nescio quid magis lugeam: an qui interfecti uel quos ceperunt uel quos grauiter zabulus inlaqueauit. Perenni poena gehennam pariter cum ipso mancipabunt, quia utique *qui facit peccatum seruus est et filius zabuli* nuncupatur.

8 dignum F. uiuo: uoui vG. noui C. etsic P. contempnor PG. contemptior C. contemnno F. (contemnno v.) 9 aliquibusdam P. a quibusdam v. aquibus FC. quibus (anteceidit ras) G. (aliquibus Φ?) 10—11 danda et tradenda militibus, mittenda Corotico GROSJEAN. 13 scottorum: scorum P. 14 apostatarum (apostatorum P) que (que G) P8: nescio an uerba transponenda sint: atque apostatarumque Pictorum, cf 257,26; de pleonismo u E. LÖFSTEDT, Spätlateinische Studien 27 sqq. sangulentos PF. sanguilentos C. sanguinolentos (i ex e, no s s) G. (pro apostatarum que — sanguinare: apostatarum, quasi sanguine uolentes saginari v.) 15 in numero P. (innumeros v): innumerus δ. innumerus <numerus> BURY. 16 crismate (e ex i?) G. neofiti δ. flagrabat Pv. (-ant G') Δ₂: fragrabat F. 17 trucidati: tritidati F. 18 et a misi ins FC. (ras in G) quem: quam F. 20 baptizatos P. qui P. ceperant G. cahinnos P. de illis: diillis F. 21 quid: quod C. quos G'. an: aut P. 22 uel: aut P. perenni v. perhenni P. (ex-e) G. perhenni C. perenne F. 23 gehennae G. mancipabant G. gehennae... <se> mancipabunt HITCHCOCK; malim gehenna... mancipabuntur, cf. 257,9. 24 peccati p est add Pv.

23—24 Ioh 8,34 quia omnis qui facit peccatum seruus est <peccati omnes pr b d Cypr D^{gr} Clem sy^s.(c)>. 24 Ioh 8,44 uos estis filii zabuli et patrem zabulum habetis Prisc I. 22: uos ex (de e) patre <uestro μ> diabolo (zabulo QR deer) estis. VL. VULG. filii zabuli Commodian Instruct. II.16.7; filii diaboli Iren IV.41,2.

5 255,1 5. Quapropter resciat omnis homo timens Deum quod a me alieni
sunt et a Christo Deo meo, *pro quo legationem fungor*, patricida, fratri-
cida, *lupi rapaces deuorantes plebem Domini ut cibum panis*, sicut ait:
Iniqui dissipauerunt legem tuam, Domine, quam in supremis tempori-
5 bus Hiberione optime benigne plantauerat atque instructa erat
fauente Deo.

6 6. Non usurpo. Partem habeo cum his *quos aduocauit et prae-*
destinauit euangelium praedicare in persecutionibus non paruis *usque*
ad extremum terrae, etsi inuidet inimicus per tyrannidem Corotici, qui
10 Deum non ueretur nec sacerdotes ipsius, quos elegit et indulsit illis
summam diuinam sublimam potestatem, *quos ligarent super terram*
ligatos esse et in caelis.

11 cf CYPRIAN. Epist. 59,2 de ecclesiae gubernandae sublimi et diuinā potestate.

1 quapropter re sciat P. quapropter resciat vF. qua re propter sciat C. propter
quārē sciat G. a me om P. a om C. (*adest in v.*) legatione vG'. 3 cibū ex -b; F.
4 quam: quoniam C. sup̄mis C. sup̄is F. 5 obtime P. (et a benigne ins v.)
6 deo: dño (s s) F. 7 quos om F. deus p quos ins P. 9 tyrannidem δ. 10 uere-
tur: ueneretur P. elegit: egegit F. 11 sublimē (e ex a) G. (om v.) (12 ligatos
esse: esse ligatos v.)

2 pro quo legationem fungor: Eph 6,20 (*u Conf 56 [251,30]*). 3 Matth 7,15 lupi
rapaces. Act 20,29 lupi graues (rapaces [*ex Matth*] c alb BFΘ^mKS*UVW. vg) ...
non parcentes gregi. Ps 13,4 qui deuorant plebem meam (populum meum Aug R
Heb) sicut (ut R Heb) cibum (escam Rom V G Gall) panis (edentes populum meum
in cibo panis M): Ps 52,5 qui deuorant (comedunt V Hil^{sem} Heb) plebem meam
(populum meum Aug R V Hil^{sem} Heb) ut (sicut Rom G C H aug² Moz. in Aug R)
cibum (cibo Aug. escam Rom G) panis (edentes populum meum ederunt panem M).
4 Ps 118,126 tempus faciendi dne (-o, cum HEB.LXX, M Hil G GallAugRLΦ): dissi-
pauerunt (derogant M. praeuaricati sunt Heb) <iniqui Hil^{pr} RCpE Rom G Gall^F Moz¹
Med^{man}. (p tuam) Ambr Moz²> legem tuam. 7—8 Rom 8,30 quos autem prae-
destinauit hos et uocauit. 8—9 usque ad extremum terrae: Act 13,47; u Conf 38,
cf etiam Conf 1.11. 11—12 Matth 16,19 quaecumque (*b c dim [e] f ff₁₋₂ g₁ q r₁₋₂*)
Cypr Hil Gild JQJP: quodcumque [VL.VULG]^{ceff} ligaueritis (*c r₂ Hil*: ligaueris
VL^{ceff}.VULG) super terram, erunt ligata (*b c dim e f ff₁₋₂ g₁ q r₂ t' Cypr Hil Gild*
JQR. ligata erunt Hil^{RPE}: erit ligatum [VL.VULG]^{ceff}) <et *b c e f ff₂ g₁ r₂ t' aur gat*
Cypr Aug Hil Gild E^{pm}H¹Θ^cQ^rW vg> in caelis. Matth 18,18 quaecumque ligae-
ritis (*d f δ μ* gat J*: alligaueritis [VL.VULG]^{ceff}) super terram erunt ligata (alligata
VL^{alq}) et (om VL^{alq}) in caelis (cum [NDL]^{gr}, [*d dim f [r₂]*] E^{pm}[L]Q: caelo [VL.
VULG]^{ceff}). Nostro loco simillima leguntur in Hil in Math XVIII.8 (Migne PL 9,
1021): ut quos in terris ligauerint ... in caelis quoque ... sint ligati et in Aug De
doctr. christ. 17 ut ... quae ligarent in terra ligata essent et in caelo; cf Cypr.Epist. 57,1.

- 7 7. Vnde ergo quaeso plurimum, *sancti et humiles corde*, adulari talibus non licet *nec cibum* nec potum *sumere* cum ipsis nec ele-
 15 mosinas ipsorum recipi debeat donec crudeliter <per> paenitentiam effusis lacrimis satis Deo faciant et liberent seruos Dei et ancillas Christi baptizatas, pro quibus mortuus est et crucifixus.
- 8 8. *Dona iniquorum reprobant Altissimus. Qui offert sacrificium ex substantia pauperum quasi qui uictimat filium in conspectu patris*
 20 *sui. Diuitias, inquit, quas congregauit iniuste euomentur de uentre eius, trahit illum angelus mortis, ira draconum mulcabitur, interficiet illum lingua colubris, comedit autem eum ignis inextinguibilis. Ideoque:*

14 *cum peccatoribus* nec cibum sumere: 1 Cor 5,11; cf 'Synodus II s. Patricii' can. 1. 14—15 *Patricii, Auxilii, Isernini can. 12: nec eius (i.e. excommunicati) elemosina recipiatur.*

13 plurimum: primum F. sancti: di F. adulari v. (adhulari F) δ: adolari P. 14 cibum P. sumere: sommere P. 15 recipi debeat P: debent recipi v. recipere debere δ. crudeliter poenitentiam (pen- G) δ. penitentiam crudeliter P. <per> inserui. (15—16 donec crudeliter effusis lacrimis poenitentiam agentes satisfaciant Deo v.) crudeliter: creduliter HITCHCOCK (collata lectione codicis F ad 244,4). 17 cristi C. baptizatas (ex -os) F. 18 iniquorum: inimicorum P. altissimus et v. 19 pauperis v. qui om Δ₂. 20 sui om v. diuitia (ex -ae, ut uid.) G'. diuitiae v. quas e corr F. cgregauit (c s s) F. congregabit Δ₂. iniuste: iniustus G'. euomentur: emouentur P. 21 angelus G'v: angelum Pδ. mulcabitur P: multabitur Δ₂. mucabitur F. (muletabitur v.) 22 linguam C. colubris PF. coluris C. colubri (sequente rasura) G. colubri v. (comedet v.) autem om vΔ₂.

13 Dan 3,87 sancti et humiles corde. 14 1 Cor 5,11 nec cibum sumere. 18—19 Eccli 34,23 dona iniquorum non probat (οὐκ εὐδοκεῖ LXX) altissimus Aug Zeno Commod VULG (non placebunt altissimo ver). Vox reprobant exstitisse uidetur in exemplari apud Hibernos usitato, cf Ionas, Vita s. Columbani I.19 munera impiorum reprobant altissimus; Vita I s. Fursei 14 (ASS Ian II.38 C) = Patricius; 'Synodus II s. Patricii' can. 2 cetera dona iniquorum reproba. 24 qui offert (offeret ver. profert m) sacrificium ex substantia pauperum (-ris m) quasi (tamquam ver) qui uictimat (-et Aug^{Spec}. percutit m. occidit ver) filium in conspectu patris sui. 20—22 Iob 20,15. 16.26 πλοῦτος ἀδίκως συναγόμενος ἐξεμεσθήσεται <ἐκ κοιλίας αὐτοῦ A>, ἐξ οἰκίας <δὲ A> αὐτοῦ ἐξελεύσει αὐτὸν ἄγγελος <θανάτου A>. θυμὸν (-ὸς A) δὲ δρακόντων θηλάσειεν (-άσει A), ἀνέλοι δὲ (καὶ ἀνέλοι A) αὐτὸν γλώσσα ὄφως ... κατέδεταί <δὲ AC> αὐτὸν πῦρ ἄκαυστον (ἄσβεστον N^{c.a mg} [mox improbat]. A) LXX: diuitiae (-a Sang) inique congregatae (congregatae inique Sang Aug^S) euomentur (uomentur Aug^{GP}). de domo eius protrahet (-it Bodl Aug^{GT^{PCb}}) eum angelus et furorem (-e Aug^{Gbd}) draconum mulgebit (mulcebit Tur Bodl. fulgebit Aug^{Pr S}). interficiat illum (eum Aug^P) lingua colubri ... comedat eum ignis inextinguibilis Hier^{HEX} (Tur[Sab] Sang[allensis 11, Caspari] Bodl[eianus, Caspari] Ambrosius De interpellatione Iob II.1

Vae qui replent se quae non sunt sua, uel: Quid prodest homini ut totum mundum lucretur et animae suae detrimentum patiatur?

- 9 25 9. Longum est per singula discutere uel insinuare, per totam legem carpere testimonia de tali cupiditate. Auaritia mortale
256,1 crimen. *Non concupisces rem proximi tui. Non occides.* Homicida non potest esse cum Christo. *Qui odit fratrem suum homicida* adscribitur. Vel: *Qui non diligit fratrem suum in morte manet.* Quanto magis reus est qui manus suas coinquinauit in sanguine filiorum
5 Dei, quos nuper *adquisiuit* in ultimis terrae per exhortationem paruitatis nostrae?

1—2 CYPRIAN. De dominica oratione 24: qui fratrem suum odit, homicida est nec ... cum Deo uiuit. Homicida non potest esse cum Christo, qui imitator Iudae maluit esse quam Christi.

23 quae (his quae v): qui F. 24 ut: si v. <se autem ipsum perdat> et detrimentum animae suae v. 25 si^{pl}gula P. insinuare: insuare F. 26 carpere: capere C. (r s a) P. testimonium P. 256,1 occidis (e s i) F. 2 est p homicida ins P. esse ins v. (manet in morte v.) 4 (coinquinat v.) 5 exhortationem vG. exortationem F. exorationem P. extationem C.

Aug in Iob 1.20; sed des Ambr ad euomentur, Aug ad colubri: diuitias quas deuorauit euomet et de uentre illius extrahet eas ds (dns A). caput aspidum suget <et vg> occidet eum lingua uiperæ ... deuorabit eum ignis qui non succenditur (extinguetur A) VULG, cf. HEB. 23 Hab 2,6 uae qui rep[leuerunt] sibi quae non sunt sua g_2 (suppl Dold): uae qui multiplicat (sed paullo infra -ant) sibi quae non sunt sua Hier^{LXX}: uae ei qui multiplicat non sua VULG.Hier^{HEB}. 23—24 Matth 16,26 quid enim prodest (proderit f q r_2 gat [u] cum [NBLØ 1 jam¹³ al]^{gr}) homini si totum mundum (a d f \bar{f}_2 Lucif Aug R [Marc 8,36: f k (r_2) DI*R]: uniuersum mundum g_1 gat B^{PKM}-TQVX*ZJP al. mundum uniuersum VULG^{pl}. VL alii alia) lucretur (lucrifaciat b. lucratus fuerit e), animae uero suae detrimentum patiatur? (VL^{pl}. VULG: et animam suam detrimentum faciat \bar{f}_1 . alii alia). v interpolatus est ex Luc 9,25 quid enim proficit homo si lucretur uniuersum mundum (totum mundum c e Aug^{Spec}. mundum totum a d r_2), se autem ipsum perdat et detrimentum sui faciat? 256,1 Rom 13,9 non occides ... non concupisces <rem proximi tui c gig Par lat 6. al Aug^{sem} L²Z^{post} cor uat*>. (ex Ex 20,13.17 non occides (-is Lugd) ... non concupisces rem [Σ^T . Petil ap Aug II.59. Gaud ap Aug I.36. Aug serm 675,24 sq Morin. ulla rem Prom. rem uel domum ω^S : domum VULG^{ceff}] proximi tui. cf Deut 5,17.21 non occides (-is Lugd) ... non concupisces uxorem proximi tui ... neque ulla rem quae fuerit proximi tui [Lugd: et uniuersa quae illius sunt Aug^{Spec}. VULG]). 1—2 1 Ioh 3,15 omnis qui odit fratrem suum homicida est: et scitis quoniam omnis homicida non habet uitam aeternam in se manentem. 3.1 Ioh 3,14 qui non diligit <fratrem suum, cum (CKLP al)^{gr} SYR, Tyc D. (qui fratrem suum non diligit Faust)> manet (permanet h q z) in morte. 5 adquisiuit: Is 43,21, u Conf 58 (252,9).

- 10 10. Numquid sine Deo uel *secundum carnem* Hiberione ueni?
 Quis me compulit? *Alligatus* sum *Spiritu* ut non uideam aliquem *de*
cognitione mea. Numquid a me piam misericordiam quod ago
 10 erga gentem illam qui me aliquando ceperunt et deuastauerunt
 seruos et ancillas domus patris mei? Ingenuus fui *secundum*
carnem; decorione patre nascor. Vendidi enim nobilitatem
 meam — non erubesco neque me paenitet — pro utilitate aliorum;
 denique seruus sum in Christo genti exterarum ob gloriam ineffabilem
 15 *perennis uitae quae est in Christo Iesu Domino nostro*.
 11 11. Et si mei me non cognoscunt, *propheta in patria sua honorem*
non habet. Forte non sumus *ex uno ouili* neque *unum Deum*
patrem habemus, sicut ait: *Qui non est mecum contra me est, et qui*
non congregat mecum spargit. Non conuenit: *Vnus destruit, alter aedi-*
 20 *ficat*. *Non quaero quae mea sunt*.

7 in a hiberione ins P. (Hyberionem v.) 8 *codicem* P *secutus recte distinxit*
 WHITE². sum om Δ₂. non om C. aliquam P. 9 a me et quod eras
 in G. 10 qui: q̄ (e ex i, ut uid) G. (quae . . . coepit et deuastauit v.) deuastar^{er}
 F. 11 et a seruos ins P. mei: meae P. 12 decorione δ: decurione Pv. 14 gente
 P. exterarum: exiere P. 15 perhennis PG. 16 cognoscunt: agnoscunt P. 17
 ouille P. (neque — 18 habemus om v.) deum unum C. 18 contra — 19 me-
 cum om C. 19 non (2) — aedificat om P. cūenit G.

7.11—12 *secundum carnem*: 2 Cor 1,17. 8 *alligatus spu*: Act 20,22, u Conf 43
 (248,27). 8—9 Gen 12,1 *de cognitione tua*. 15 cf Rom 6,23 *uita aeterna in xpo*
ihu dno nostro. 16—17 Ioh 4,44 *propheta in patria sua* (*b e aur*: sua patria VL^{cell},
 VULG) honorem (dignitatem *b*) non habet. 17 Ioh 10,16 et alias oues habeo quae
 non sunt ex (*dim h δ VULG*—om: de *a c d e ff₂ h₂ r₁ μ gat Aug E*) hoc ouili . . . et fiet
 unum ouile (unus grex *a—d e f ff₂ l aur TEST^{Pl}*). 17—18 Eph 4,6 unus ds et (*om*
Iren CT cum [min^{gr}.TEST]^{alg}) pater omnium. Cf Epist 16 (258,4—5), *nisi utroque*
loco ad Mal 2,10 (*u Epist 16*) *alluditur*. 18—19 Matth 12,30 qui non est mecum
 contra (*aduersus ff_{1,2} k Cypr Aug*. —um *d g₂ Ambr Hil Cypr^{codd} alg*) me est et qui
 non congregat (*colligit c d k Cypr Aug Ambr uario uerborum ordine*) mecum spargit
 (*dispargit a—d ff₂ g₁. [2] [μ]. s s gat. Cypr Ambr Hil ELQ*). Cf Luc 11,23 qui non est
 mecum *aduersum* (—us *f h₂ l q a₂ gat ΣE*: contra *d r₁ δ Hierⁱⁿ Is Aug DL vg*) me est et
 qui non colligit (*congregat d δ*) mecum dispergit (*spargit ff₂ gig [i l] q δ Cypr Aug. dis*
pargit r₁). 19—20 Eccli 34,28 unus aedificans, alius destruens (*Oros*: unus aedifi-
 cans et unus destruens *ver Aug^{Spec} VULG cum LXX*). Cf Gal 2,18 si enim quae de-
 struxi haec iterum (*re- c r t Orig Ambrst VULG^{A.mul al}*) aedifico. 20 1 Cor 13,6
 non quaerit quae sua sunt (non quaerit sua uel propria *g*). Cf 2 Cor 12,14 non enim
 quaero quae uestra sunt sed uos.

Non mea gratia sed Deus *qui dedit hanc sollicitudinem in corde meo* ut unus essem de *uenatoribus siue piscatoribus* quos olim Deus *in nouissimis diebus* ante prae-nuntiauit.

12 12. Inuidetur mihi. Quid faciam, Domine? Valde despicior.

25 Ecce oues tuae circa me laniantur atque depraedantur, et supradictis latrunculis, iubente Corotico hostili mente. Longe est a caritate Dei traditor Christianorum in manus Scottorum atque Pictorum. *Lupi rapaces* deglutierunt gregem Domini, qui utique Hiberione cum summa diligentia optime crescebat, et filii Scottorum et filiae

257,1 regulorum monachi et uirgines Christi enumerare nequeo. Quam ob rem *iniuria iustorum non te placeat*; etiam *usque ad inferos non placebit*.

13 13. Quis sanctorum non horreat iocundare uel conuiuium fruiere cum talibus? De spoliis defunctorum Christianorum repleuerunt domos suas, de rapinis uiuunt. Nesciunt miseri uenenum letale cibum porrigunt ad amicos et filios suos, sicut Eua non intellexit quod utique mortem tradidit uiro suo. Sic sunt omnes qui male agunt: *mortem* perennem poenam *operantur*.

21 qui dedit: quidē δ. (quidem v.) 22 piscatoribus: peccatoribus siue peccatoribus (siue pecc. del) F. 23 penuntiauit F. 24 dispitior P. despicior F. 25 tuas P. 26 coritico P. hostili mente PG': hostile mente δ (= Φ?). (hoste: mente enim v.) 28 gregem: legem P. 28—29 cum summa: consumma PC. crescebat optime *cum signo transpositionis* G. 2 iustorum: istorum C. te: t G'. 2—3 qui propter iniuriam iustorum non te placat, etiam usque ad inferos non placabit v; *conicias in V fuisse*: quapropter iniuria iustorum non te placeat, etc. 4 orreat PF. conuiuio G'. furere P. frui G'. (facere v.) 6 domos PvG': domus δ. 6—7 nesciunt miseri, uenenum *interpunxit* HITCHCOCK. 7 (letalem v.) cybum PF. ad: et F. 8 utique om C. 8 mortem — 9 agunt om Δ₂. tradidit: dedit P. 9 mortem perennem (perhennem F) poenam vδ: perhennem penam mortem P. operantur: neras in G.

21—22 2 Cor 8,16 gratias autem Deo qui dedit hanc ipsam (*Ambrst: pro* hanc ipsam *legitur* eandem in VL. VULG) sollicitudinem pro uobis in corde Titī. 22 de uenatoribus siue piscatoribus: Ier 16,16; u Conf 40 (247,9—10). 23 in nouissimis diebus: Act 2,17; u Conf 40 (247,24). Cf etiam Conf 34 (245,23). 28 lupi rapaces: Matth 7,15; u Epist 5 (255,3). 2—3 Eccli 9,17 non placeat tibi iniuria iniustorum (iustorum *AugSpec (RS)*) sciens quoniam usque ad inferos non placebit impius. (μη εὐδοκῆσης ἐν (om A) εὐδοκίᾳ ἀσεβῶν, μνήσθητι ὅτι ἕως ἔδου οὐ μὴ δικαιοθῶσιν LXX.)

- 14 10 14. Consuetudo Romanorum Gallorum Christianorum: mittunt uiros sanctos idoneos ad Francos et ceteras gentes cum tot milia solidorum ad redimendos captiuos baptizatos. Tu potius interficis et uendis illos genti exterae ignoranti Deum; quasi in lupanar tradis *membra Christi*. Qualem spem habes in Deum, uel qui
15 te consentit aut qui te communicat uerbis adulationis? Deus iudicabit. Scriptum est enim: *Non solum facientes mala sed etiam consentientes damnandi sunt.*
- 15 15. Nescio *quid dicam* uel *quid loquar* amplius de defunctis filiorum Dei, quos gladius supra modum dure tetigit. Scriptum est
20 enim: *Flete cum flentibus*, et iterum: *Si dolet unum membrum condoleant omnia membra*. Quapropter ecclesia *plorat et plangit* filios et filias suas quas adhuc gladius nondum interfecit, sed prolongati et exportati in longa terrarum, ubi *peccatum* manifeste grauiter impudenter *abundat*, ibi uenundati ingenui

19 nescio an uerba quos gladius dure tetigit ad carmen quoddam heroicum referenda sint.

10 christianorum om P, cui adsentitur WHITE². 12 (millibus v.) baptizatos: baptizat (in fine uersus F) δ. potius: totius (toties, e in rasura, G') δ. (omnes v.) 13 ignorante P. 14 tradis: tardis P. membris F. 15 te consensit P. (tecum sentit v.) te (2) om v. adulationis P. (uerbis alienis et adulationi v.) 16 facientes: fatientibus P. 17 c̄sentientes G. dampnandi Δ₂. 20 cum: com P. 21 comdoleant P. c̄doleant F. (condolent v.) ploret F. planget δ. 22 gladiōs G. φ interficit P. 23 exportat] ti inc V. in: per V. spatia p terrarum ins V. 24 grauiter P: grauetur Vδ. (graueter Φ?) impudenter Pδ: impudenter impudens ibi habitat et V. habundat PΔ₂.

10 2 Cor 7,10 mortem operatur. 14 cf 1 Cor 6,14 tollens ergo membra xpi faciam membra meretricis? 16—17 Rom 1,32 qui talia agunt digni sunt morte: non solum <qui (gig) w Gild D> ea (mala Cypr. praua Gelas) faciunt sed etiam (w Gild D vg: et [VL.VULG]^{cett}) <qui c d³ dem e g gig w Orig TEST^{al} A^oD VULG^{al} pl> consentiunt facientibus. 18 Ioh 12,49 quid dicam (faciam e) aut (d t' EO: et [VL.VULG]^{cett}) quid loquar. 20 Rom 12,15 flete (m t w Sed Beda DT S: flere [VL.VULG]^{cett}) cum flentibus. 20—21 cf Cor 12,26 si quid patitur unum membrum conpatiantur omnia membra; sed cf Tert De paen. 10: condoleat universum corpus cum uno membro. 21—22 Matth 2,18 (Ier 31,15) Rachel plorans (plorantis k. plangens d) filios suos. 23—24 Rom 5,20 abundauit peccatum d e f g Iren Orig Ambrst Hier Aug DF*L: abundauit delictum (VL.VULG)^{cett} (multiplicatum est peccatum Tyc.)

25 homines, Christiani in seruitute redacti sunt, praesertim indignissimorum pessimorum apostatarumque Pictorum.

16 16. Idcirco cum tristitia et maerore uociferabo: O speciosissimi
258,1 atque amantissimi fratres et filii quos in Christo genui enumerare nequeo, quid faciam uobis? Non sum dignus Deo neque hominibus

subuenire. *Praeualuit iniquitas iniquorum super nos. Quasi extranei facti sumus.* Forte non credunt *unum baptismum* percepimus uel
5 *unum Deum patrem* habemus. Indignum est illis Hiberionaci sumus. Sicut ait: *Nonne unum Deum habetis? Quid dereliquistis unusquisque proximum suum?*

17 17. Idcirco doleo pro uobis, doleo, carissimi mihi; sed iterum gaudeo intra meipsum: non gratis *laboraui* uel peregrinatio mea
10 in uacuum non fuit. Et contigit scelus tam horrendum

25 seruitutem V. 26 pessimorum: pessimorumque V. apostatarumque P. atque apostatarum V. *nescio an fuerit in Φ*: pessimorum atque apostatarumque, cf 254,13 sq. 27 cum: cōn F. uociferabor G'. speciosissime C. 1 quos om P. enumerari P. 2 deo om V. 3 iniquorum: inimicorum P. 4 percepimus V: percipimus P6. uel: et V. 5 quod de p illis ins V. Hiberionaci (cf 242,19) *scripsi*: hiberia (hýberia V. de Hibernia PAPEBROCH) nati φ. 6 sicut ait: sic enim aiunt V. 8 idcirco G. pro: de P. carissimi δ. k̄mī PV. iīrū P. 9 quia a non ins V. non om F. uel: et V. tam: illo in tempore V. orrendum P. horendum F. horridum V. et p horridum ins V.

1 1 Cor 4,15 in xpo... ego uos genui (generaui *Tert^{bis}*, cf *Orig*); cf Philem 10, et Epist. 2(254,15). 3 Ps 64,4 uerba (sermone Aug R) iniquorum (iniquitatum *Heb*, cf *HEX* [A'. Σ']) praequaluerunt (inualuerunt *Hil^{RPb}*) super nos (aduersum me *Heb*. potuerunt praeter me M). Cf Ez 18,20 iniquitas iniqui (*gm Iulian ap Aug*) = Ez 33,12 (*Auctor de uita Christi ap Aug*; iniquitas impii g): *utroque loco impietas impii Aug^{Spec} Faust VULG.* 3—4 Ps 68,9 extraneus (A M *Cassd Gall.* exter Rom V G C carn H Moz Med. alienatus [ἀπηλλοτριωμένος *LXX*] Aug. alienus R *Heb*) factus sum. 4 Eph 4,5 unum baptismum (-um *Tert Pel^B Sed P**). 5 unum dm patrem habemus: Eph 4,6, u Epist 11 (256,17—18); sed cf *infra ad* 258,6—7. 5.6—7 Mal 2,10 nonne ds unus condidit nos? nonne pater unus est omnium nostrum? quid utique dereliquistis unusquisque fratrem suum? *Cypr.* (nonne — nostrum cf *Iren*): nonne pater unus omnium uestrum? nonne ds unus creauit uos? quare reliquistis unusquisque fratrem suum? *Hier^{LXX}*, cf *N^{c.b}* (sed ὁμᾶς et ὁμῶν *LXX^{om}*): numquid non pater unus omnium nostrum? numquid non ds unus creauit nos? quare ergo despicit unusquisque nostrum fratrem suum, uiolans pactum patrum nostrorum? *Aug^{Spec} Gild VULG.* 9—10 Phil 2,16 quia nec in uacuum cucurri neque in uacuum (irritum *Ambrst*) laboraui.

ineffabile, Deo gratias, creduli baptizati, de saeculo recessistis ad paradysum. Cerno uos: migrare coepistis ubi *nox non erit neque luctus neque mors amplius, sed exultabitis sicut uituli ex uinculis resoluti et conculcabitis iniquos et erunt cinis sub pedibus*

15 *uestris.*

- 18 18. Vos ergo regnabitis cum apostolis et prophetis atque martyribus. Aeterna regna capietis, sicut ipse testatur inquit: *Venient ab oriente et occidente et recumbent cum Abraham et Isaac et Iacob in regno caelorum. Foris canes et uenefici et homicidae, et: Mendacibus 20 periuris pars eorum in stagnum ignis aeterni.* Non inmerito ait

11—12 *Dicta Patricii 2* (LA fol 9r^a 35 sq): De saeculo requissistis ad paradysum. Deo gratias. 16 cf SECUNDINUS 92: cum apostolis regnabit (*Patricius*).

11 ineffabilem F. creduli: credentes et V. sc̄lo PVΔ₂: celo F. 12 paradysum PV. 14 c̄culcabitis G. suppedibus C. 16 martiribus FG. 17 et a aeterna ins V. iniquens V. 18 et (1): ab G. ysaac V. isaac (a *prius e corr*) F. 19 canis F. ueneficos Pδ. (-ci G') homicidię F. mendaces VG'. 20 periuris: periuri. (*punctum in rasura*) G. et periuri V. pars: par F. aeternę Δ₂, *corr* G'. inmerito P: merito δ (i s s G'). enim in uanum V.

12—13 Apoc 22,5 καὶ νύξ οὐκ ἔσται ἔτι (ἐκεῖ 1 7 al) GR. et nox ultra non erit *gig l* VULG. et nox non erit iam *t.* et nox iam non erit *Prim.* et nox non erit amplius *Iren Ambr Beat.* 21,4 et mors ultra non erit neque luctus *gig l* VULG. et mors iam non erit neque luctus *Aug Prim.* et mors non erit amplius nec (non *Iren*) luctus *Iren Ambr.* et mors non erit amplius et luctus non erit amplius *Beat.* De ordine uerborum cf *Iust Dial c Tryph 45*: οἱ δὲ ἐν . . . ἁλυντὶ καὶ ἀθανασίᾳ συνῶσιν. 13—15 Mal 4,2—3 exsultabitis sicut uituli ex uinculis resoluti et conculcabitis iniquos et erunt cinis sub pedibus uestris *Aug Ciu Dei 18,35.* cf salietis sicut uituli de uinculis relaxati et conculcabitis iniquos et erunt cinis subter pedes uestros *HierLXX.* exhibitis uelut uituli de uinculis soluti et conculcabitis inimicos *Tert.* et luxoriamini quasi uituli de uinculis laxati et conculcabitis iniquos, quoniam erunt cineres subter pedes uestros *MS Bodl Auct F. 4.32*: salietis sicut uituli de armento et calcabitis impios, cum fuerint cinis sub planta pedum uestrorum *AugSpec.Ciu Dei 20,17.* VULG. 17—19 Matth 8,11; u Conf 39 (247,4—5). 19 Apoc 22,15 foris (-as *gig AugSpec*) canes et (*am. l*) uenefici et impudici et homicidae. 19—20 Apoc 21,8 et homicidis et ueneficis et idolatris et omnibus mendacibus pars (particula *Tert*) eorum (*gig: om Tert Prim*: illorum *VL^{cett}, VULG*) <erit omnes *pr m Tert*> in stagno ardenti igne et sulphure (*pro ardenti* — sulphure: ignis ardentis *m.* ignis et sulphuris *Tert.* quod ardet igni et sulphure *Prim*). missi sunt in stagnum ignis in quod dns dixit ignem aeternum *Iren^{5,35,2}.*

apostolus: *Vbi iustus uix saluus erit, peccator et impius transgressor legis ubi se recognoscet?*

19 19. Vnde enim Coroticus cum suis sceleratissimis, rebellatores Christi, ubi se uidebunt, qui mulierculas baptizadas praemia
25 distribuunt ob miserum regnum temporale, quod utique in momento transeat? *Sicut nubes uel fumus, qui utique uento dispergitur, ita peccatores fraudulentis a facie Domini peribunt; iusti autem epulentur in magna constantia cum Christo, iudicabunt nationes et regibus iniquis dominabuntur in saecula saeculorum, Amen.*

20 259,1 20. *Testificor coram Deo et angelis suis quod ita erit sicut intimauit imperitiae meae. Non mea uerba sed Dei et apostolorum atque prophetarum quod ego Latinum exposui, qui numquam enim mentiti sunt. Qui crediderit saluus erit, qui uero non crediderit condemnabitur, Deus locutus est.*

21 et *p* impius *ins* V. 22 recognoscet V: -it P⁸. 23 rebellatoribus -VG'. 24 cristi C. qui VG': quas P. quam FC. praemia: et predia orphanorum spurcissimis satellitibus suis V. 25 distribuunt G': -untur ϕ , cf *adnotationem ad* 247,11. ob: o P. miserum G': misere PV. miserere C. miscere F. 26 transit V. nubs P. 27 et *p* peccatores *ins* V. fraudulentis P. 28 cristo C. et *p* christo *ins* V. 1 sanctis *a* angelis *ins* V. quod: quo F. quod ita erit *bis* P. 2 intimabit F. intimauer' G'. insinuauit GROSJEAN, cf Conf 22. 27. 42. 47; Epist 9. sunt ista *p* uerba *ins* V. 3 quod: qu ϕ V. latinum exposui: in latinum transtuli V. numquam: n \bar quam P. enim *p* deus (5) *transposuit* V. enim: eim C. 4 et *p* sunt *ins* V. crediderit V. salui erunt V. 5 d \bar s enim loquutus est V.

21—22 1 Petr 4,18 et si iustus <quidem *h* *gig* *q* *Gild* DV *S*> uix saluus erit (*h* *Aug* *Cons* *Eu* D. saluus sit *Aug* *Rom* *Gild*: saluabitur [VL.VULG]^{cett}), peccator et impius (*h* *q* *t* *Aug*: impius et peccator VL^{cett}.VULG) ubi parebunt (parebit *t* *z* *Gild*. apparebunt et -it [VL.TEST]^{alq})? 26—29 cf Sap 5,15 quoniam spes impii tamquam lanugo est quae a uento tollitur et tamquam spuma gracilis quae a procella dispergitur et tamquam fumus qui a uento diffusus est. Ps 67,3—4 sicut deficit fumus <ita G. sic *Tyc*> deficient; sicut fluit cera a facie ignis, sic pereant peccatores (impii M *Heb*) a facie di. et (om R *Heb*) iusti <autem *Heb*> epulentur (iucundentur *Cypr* *Aug* M. laetentur *Heb*. laetentur in laetitia [V] *Hil*). Sap 5,1 tunc stabunt iusti in magna constantia aduersus eos qui se angustauerunt. Sap 3,8 iudicabunt nationes et dominabuntur populis. 1 2 Tim 4,1; 1 Tim 5,21. u Conf 61 (253,6—7). sanctis *in* V (cf Matth 16,27 [*b* *d* μ^{mg}]; Marc 8,38) *suppletum uidetur esse* *ex* *Conf* 61. 4—5 Marc 16,15—16; u Conf 40 (247,19—20). 5 ds locutus est: Ps 59,8; 107,8.

- 21 21. Quaeso plurimum ut quicumque famulus Dei promptus fuerit ut sit gerulus litterarum harum, ut nequaquam subtrahatur uel abscondatur
 a nemine, sed magis potius legatur coram cunctis plebibus et praesente ipso Corotico. Quod si Deus inspirat illos *ut quandoque Deo*
 10 *resipiscant*, ita ut uel sero paeniteant quod tam impie gesserunt — homicida erga fratres Domini — et liberent captiuas baptizatas quas ante ceperunt, ita ut mereantur Deo uiuere et sani efficiantur hic et in aeternum! Pax Patri et Filio et Spiritui Sancto, Amen.

10.12 INNOCENTIUS [AUG] Epist. 182,7 (CSEL 44,722,13 f.) si umquam <ad m> sanum ... resipuerint.

6 quicumque F. ut p dei ins F. propmtus V. promptus F. p(ro)mptus G. promtus C. prumtus P. 7 literarum V. uel abscondatur P. om vδ; sed cf 237,10—11. 8 a nemine: animine F. praesente: p̄senti P. 9 coritico P. quod si: quid sit P. 10 ut om F. impie F. gresserunt F. 11 homicidae G. p domini ins V: fuerunt sed peniteant. et om G (sed spatium exstat p dñi). 12 quas: quos Δ₂. ita om P. mererentur δ. (mereantur G'). 13 spiritu P.F. amen. EXPLICIT PASS̄:- G.

9—10 cf 2 Tim 2,25—26 ne quando (μήποτε) det illis ds paenitentiam ... et (ut dem Cassd) resipiscant a diaboli laqueis (cf Epist 4 uel quos grauiter zabulus inlaqueauit).

EPISTVLARUM DEPERDITARVM FRAGMENTA ET TESTIMONIA

Fragmenta:

1. BPh [V₂ c. 13; V₄ c. 17; Trip r (R 124r α 18—22)]:

(W) in illo enim tempore audiebat	(R) ar no cluned-seom isind aimsir
aliquos psallentes in se ne-	sin alaili no-sallaitir ar med-
sciens qui psallerent, ut ipse	on ann oculus ni fitir cia no
dicit:	sallad, ut ipse dicit:

5 (BPh) audiebam quosdam psallentes in me et nescio qui essent.

1 enim: uero V₄. 2 aliquos: quosdam (s l l- aliquos) V₄. intus in se V₂. nesciens qui psallerent om V₄. 4 dicit: dicebat V₄. alibi indicat dicens rColg. 5 quosdam: aliquos V₂P. V₄. <spiritus V₂. ex spiritibus V₄>, sed cf similem locum Conf 24. pallantes R. nesciebam rColg. V₄.

2. V₄ c. 1:

Natus est Patricius patre Kalfurno et matre Concessa, ut ipse dixit in libro epistolarum:

Ego sum Patricius filius Kalfurni matrem habens Concessam.

Dubium est utrum uerba laudata ad Conf 1 (235,4—5) an ad epistulam quandam deperditam referenda sint.

3. *Fragmentum epistulae ut uidetur spuriae exstat apud Iocelinum, Vita s. Patricii 82 ex. (79):*

Huius signi et praecedentis sanctus in epistola quadam meminit quam ad quendam dilectum suum in ultramarinis partibus degentem scribens inter cetera dicit:

Dedit Dominus mihi exiguo uirtutem faciendi signa in populo barbaro qualia nec a magnis apostolis leguntur facta ita ut in

1 mihi Dominus *edd.* uero a nec ins T (= MS Dublin, TrinColl F. 4. 6, saec. XIV/XV).

- nomine Domini Dei nostri Iesu Christi resuscitarem a mortuis corpora in puluere ab annis multis resoluta. Nullus tamen
 5 obsecro credat me ob ista siue his similia parificandum apostolis aut aliquibus perfectis uiris, cum sim exiguus et peccator et contemptibilis.

4 a multis annis *edd.* 6 aliquibus: ullis *edd.*

Testimonia:

4. Epistola ad milites Corotici 3 (254,16—20):

Postera die ... misi epistolam cum sancto presbytero quem ego ex infantia docui, cum clericis, ut nobis aliquid indulgerent de praeda uel de captiuis baptizatis quos ceperunt: cachinnos fecerunt de illis.

Cf MUIR (498,10 sq; Prob II.27): Patricius autem eum (*om* MUIR^B) per epistolam ad uiam ueritatis reuocare temptauit. Cuius salutaria deridebat monita, *ubi epistula illa de qua Patricius mentionem facit cum ea quae ad nos peruenit confunditur*, cf N. J. D. WHITE, St. Patrick: his writings and life, 52.

5. LA fol 9r α (301,11—17 Stokes):

Caetiacus et Sachellus ordinabant episcopos prespiteros diaconos clericos sine consilio Patricii in campo Aii. Et accusauit illos Patricius et mittens aepistolas illis exierunt ad poenitentiam ducti ad Ardmache ad Patricium et fecerunt poenitentiam monachorum duo pueri Patricii prumpti. Et dixit illis: 'Non magnae erunt aecclesiae uestrae'.

Cf MS COTTON OTHO E. xiii fol 132b + USSERIUS, *Antiquitates* p 1049: In libris Patrici: Duo episcopi Cechianus et Conallus in campo hAi (MS: bai) episcopos indignos ordinauerunt, quos increpauit Patricius dicens: 'Quare absque consilio nostro aepiscopos ordinastis? Quam indigni sunt apud Dominum ordinari! Ideo ecclesiae uestrae sint semper minimae'. Et monachi in paenitentiam adducti sunt.

Haec nota ad Tirechani excerpta pertinere uidetur, cf P. GROSJEAN, AB 62 (1944) 63 sq.

dicta PATRICII

LA fol 9r α 32—43:

- (1) Timorem Dei habui ducem itineris mei per Gallias atque Italiam, etiam in insolis quae sunt in mari Terreno. (2) De

saeculo requissistis ad paradissum. Deo gratias. (3) Aeclessia
 Scotorum immo Romanorum (3a) ut Christiani ita ut Romani
 sitis. ut decantetur uobiscum oportet omni hora orationis uox illa
 laudabilis Curie lesson Christe lesson. Omnis aecl(esia) quae
 sequitur me cantet Cyrie lesson Christe lesson Deo gratias.

(1) *Notum erat Tirechano*, cf *LA 9r v* (302,19—23 Stokes): uii alijs annis ambu-
 lauit et nauigauit in fluctibus et campistibus locis et in conuallibus montanis per
 Gallias atque Italiam totam atque in insolis quae sunt in mari Terreno, ut ipse dixit
 in commemoratione laborum; u *supra*, p 25 adn. 46. Cf *Probus I.19.* (2) = *Epist*
17 (258,11 sq); cf *Conf 19* (241,12). 23 (243,2). 42 (248,13 sq). requissistis] z in *mg*.
 (3) *Dubium an Patricio attribui debeat, nisi quod P. Grosjean haud improbabili-
 ter uerba Aeclessia — Romanorum dictum Patricii, cetera (3a) spuria esse censet (AB 52, 410 sq).*

APPENDIX: A TENTATIVE RECONSTRUCTION OF Ψ

As promised above (p. 26), I give here the reconstructed Ψ -text in its entirety.

What has been said in Chapter I.4 will be sufficient to justify this endeavour, and to account for its limitations. We can reconstruct Ψ only as it is preserved in U. The Ψ -text of U is regained by induction: from V_2 and V_4 we reconstruct W, from W and Trip, BPh; similarly, from V_3 and Prob, J. Finally, from BPh, J (except where dependent on Muir), and Muir we reconstruct U.

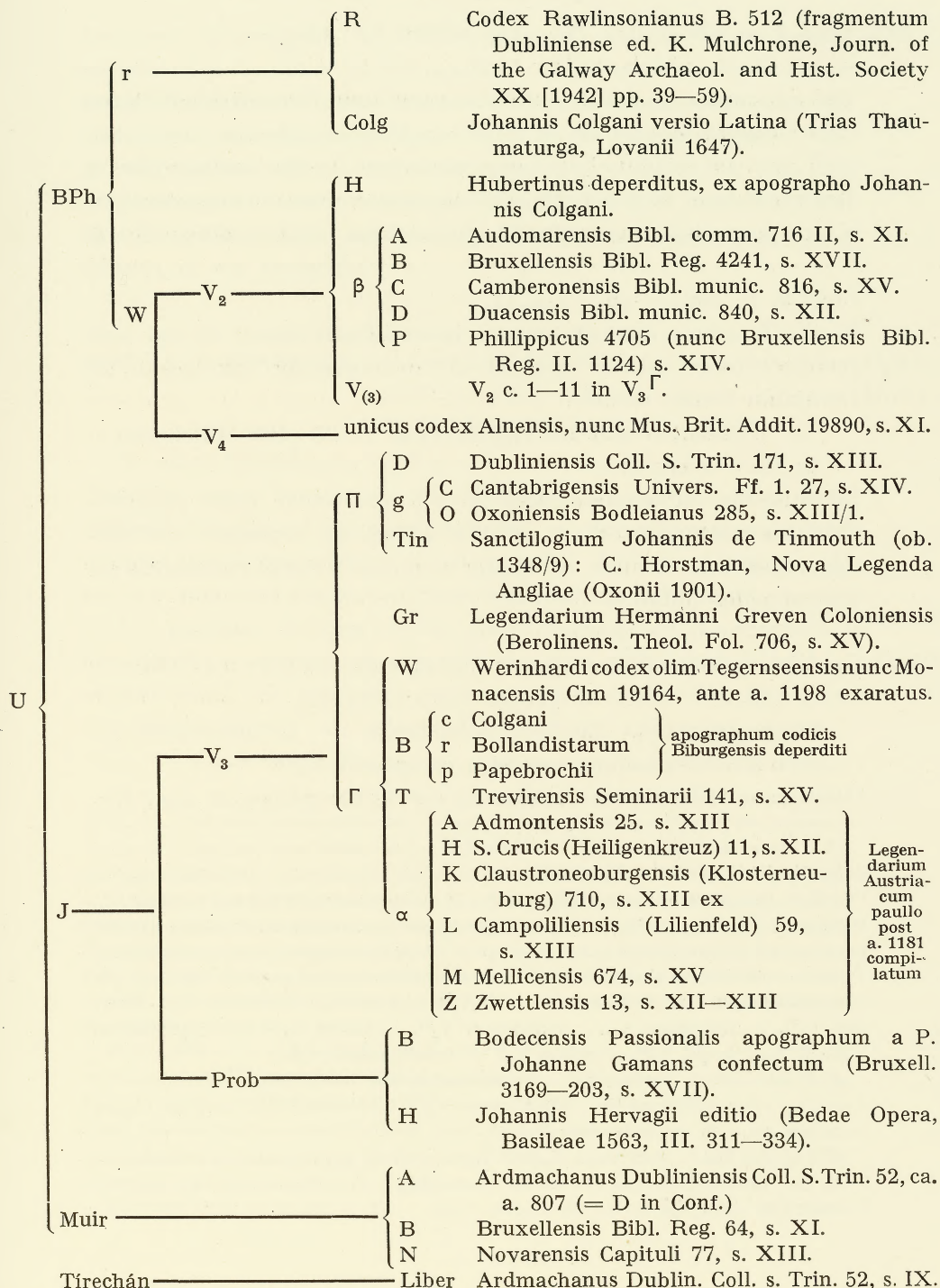
In my reconstruction of Ψ I have adhered to the following rules:

- 1) Within each group (BPh, J, and Muir) any variant supported by another group must a priori be considered the original reading of its own group.
- 2) Where all three groups are comparable, agreement of two groups rules out the third.
- 3) Agreement of any variant with an uncontroverted ω -reading overrides rules (1) and (2); even agreement with either a D- or a Φ -reading is strong support.
- 4) Where our evidence for Ψ is incomplete, or where there is suspicion of later correction or contamination, we must decide the merits of the case.

My reconstruction will provide the following details:

- 1) Reference to the paragraphs of the Confessio, and to page and line of the present edition.
- 2) Reference to the documents from which the text is restored, and to the primary sources for which these documents stand.
- 3) The reconstructed text. My reconstruction follows faithfully the evidence of the Lives; only where all our sources narrate in the third person, I have restored the first.
- 4) The *apparatus criticus*. Since disagreement of our sources is often due merely to greater or lesser accuracy in quoting, only those variants have been listed which seemed to bear on the text of the Confessio. The result is a negative *apparatus* (or nearly so) for the literal quotations in BPh, and a positive *apparatus* for the remainder.

Conspectus Siglorum:



BPh *Conf. 1*, p. 235,6—11. $V_{2(3).11}$; *partim* $V_4.1.15$.

in libris epistolarum¹:

Ubi ego capturam dedi². Annorum eram tunc fere sedecim³. Deum enim⁴ uerum ignorabam et Hiberione⁵ adductus⁶ sum in captiuitate⁷ cum tot milibus hominum secundum merita nostra, quia⁸ a Deo recessimus et praecepta eius non custodiuimus et sacerdotibus nostris non obediētes fuimus⁹ qui nostram salutem admonebant.

Conf. 2, p. 235,15—16. $V_{2(3).11}$.

Et ibi Dominus aperuit sensum incredulitatis meae¹ ut uel sero rememorarem² delicta mea³ et ut⁴ conuerterem⁵ toto corde ad Dominum Deum meum⁶.

P. 235,16—236,2. $V_{2(3).4}$; $V_4.4$; r 106—109 Mulchrone.

in libro epistolarum¹:

Et² misertus est³ adolescentiae <et V_2 > ignorantiae meae et custodiuit me antequam scirem eum et antequam saperem⁴ uel⁵ distinguerem⁶ inter bonum et malum et muniuit me et consolatus est me⁷ ut pater filium.

U(BPh,J) *Conf. 16*, p. 239,14—21. $V_2.13$; $V_4.16$; r (R fol 124r α 1—14);

partim $V_3.13$; Prob I.2.

ut ipse dicit V_2 . in libro epistolarum r. in libro quem de uita et conuersatione sua ipse composuit V_4 :

<Postquam Hiberionem deueneram (cf $V_2.12$: postquam ergo Hy-

P. 235,6—11: 1 episcopi V_2^P 2 sic V_2^H . V_4 a.c.; alibi alia leguntur. 3 quindecim V_2 . Hic V_4 desinit, sed legitur in c.1 (= Lib. Lismorensis 44 f.; MS Stowe C.IV. 3) "ex libris epistolarum": nos dispersi sumus in ultimos fines (per ultimas regiones Lis) terrarum (cf *Conf. 1*, p 235,12: dispersit nos in gentibus multis etiam usque ad ultimum terrae) propter peccata nostra, eo quod Domini praecepta (praeceptum Domini V_4) non custodiuimus et mandata eius non obseruauimus (praecepta et mandata eius non custodiuimus Lis, cf Stowe). 4 om V_2^H . 5 restitui: hiberiorem $V_2\beta$. hiberniae V_2^H . ad hiberniam V_3 . 6 abductus V_2^H . ductus V_3^c . 7 captiuitatem V_2^H . V_3^c . 8 qui V_2^H . quibus $V_2\beta$. 9 obediuius $V_2\beta$.

P. 235,15—16: 1 nostrae V_2 . 2 rememoraremus (-ur β) V_2 . 3 nostra V_3 . 4 om V_2 . 5 conuerterem V_3 ; conuerteremur V_2 . 6 nostrum V_2^H . (pro conuerterem — meum: ad eum conuerteremur $V_2\beta$).

P. 235,16—236,2: 1 episcopi $V_2.(3)$ (episcopali α), sed epistolarum PAPEBROCH. 2 om V_4 . 3 om V_2^{AP} . V_4 . 4 om r. 5 om $V_2(3)$. r. 6 discernere V_2 . om V_3 . 7 mei r (R). om $V_2\beta$.

berionem [hiberiores β] classis deuenit)) cotidie igitur¹ pecora pascebam et frequens² in die orabam³. Magis ac magis⁴ accedebat⁵ amor Dei et timor⁶ ipsius et fides et spiritus⁷ augebatur⁸ ut in die una usque ad centum orationes et in nocte prope similiter⁹, ut¹⁰ etiam¹¹ in siluis et¹² monte¹³ manebam, et ante lucem excitabar ad orationem per niuem¹⁴ per gelu per pluuiam <et nihil mali sentiebam J> neque ulla pigritia erat in me — sicut¹⁵ modo uideo, quia¹⁶ tunc spiritus in me feruebat.¹⁷

Conf. 17, p. 239, 22—27. V₂.14.17.18; V₄.18.21;

r (R fol. 124r α 32—3; v α 41—β 5);

V₃.14; Prob I.3. — partim Tir.

U(BPh,J,

Muir);Tir

in libro epistolarum (r. V₄):

Quadam nocte in somno¹ audiui uocem dicentem mihi: 'Bene ieiunas² cito iturus³ ad patriam tuam', et iterum⁴ post *paululum*⁵ tempus audiui responsum⁶ dicentem mihi: 'Ecce nauis tua parata est⁷', et non erat prope sed forte habebat⁸ ducenta milia passus⁹ et ibi¹⁰ nunquam fueram nec ibi notum quemquam <hominem V₄> habebam¹¹ <cf Prob: relinquens homines cum quibus fuerat captius septem annis. Hic (sic *edd.*) ergo currens in uirtute Dei, qui uiam eius dirigebat, nihil metuebat donec> perueni ad nauem illam¹².

*P. 239, 14—21: Caput integrum extat in V₂. r; nonnulla haud neglegenda quae leguntur in V₃, V₄, Prob suis locis laudabuntur. 1 om R.V₄. 2 frequens V₄. r^{Colg}: frequenter V₂, V₃, Prob. 3 et — orabam om R. 4 magis magisque V₂^H. 5 accedebat V₂β (accessit *Gielemans*): accendebatur V₂^H. accrescebat r, cf V₄. 6 timor dei et amor J, cf Muir. 7 et spiritus r: om V₂, V₃, V₄. 8 U (Y) cum ω uidetur legisse: et fides augebatur et spiritus agebatur. 9 add peragerem V₂β. psallerem V₂^H. orarem V₄, cf Prob. 10 ut R solus. 11 et V₂^A. V₄. 12 add in V₂^H. V₃^c. 13 montibus V₂β. V₄, V₃^cg. Prob. 14 nubem BPh (corr r^{Colg}), cf imbrem *Gielemans*. 15 sed V₂. s R. 16 quod r^{Colg}. V₂β. quantum V₂^H. 17 tunc — feruebat: cf Muir^B (Prob) tunc spiritus feruebat in eo.*

*P. 239, 22—27: 1 somnis V₂β. Prob. Tir. 2 add et (om W) bene (om J) oras omnes praeter V₃^T. Muir. (bene oras et bene ieiunas *Lebor Brecc*). 3 iturus: es iturus V₄. V₃^B. iturus es Prob. exiturus V₃^{BGr}. (iturus V₃^{Gr}). 4 iterum in V₃ tantum. 5 paululum (ω) dubitanter restitui: paruum Prob. non — multum W. om V₃. 6 responsum (cf post responsa diuina Muir): uocem BPh, J. 7 Ecce — est testatur Tir. 8 habebat r. alibi alia leguntur. 9 passuum J. Muir. 10 ubi Muir^B (Prob.) 11 nec — habebam Prob solus, sed cf V₄. 12 et perueni ad nauem illam V₂; cf Prob.*

U(BPh, J) *Conf.* 18, p. 240, 4-14. V₂.18; Prob I.4.5.

Et illa die qua perueni profecta est nauis de loco suo et locutus sum ut haberem nauigationem¹ cum illis et gubernatori displicuit et acriter cum indignatione respondit: 'Nequaquam tu nobiscum appetas ire'², et cum haec audissem separavi me ab illis ut uenirem ad tuguriolum³ ubi hospitabar et in itinere cepi orare et antequam orationem consummare⁴ audiui unum ex illis fortiter exclamantem⁵ post me: 'Veni cito, quia uocant te homines isti', et statim ad illos reuersus sum et ceperunt mihi dicere: 'Veni, quia ex fide recipimus te'⁶; fac nobiscum amicitiam quomodo uolueris'. (Cf *Prob* I.5, ubi *Conf.* 18, p. 240, 14-17 sic exprimuntur: Eadem die coepit Patricius praedicare nautis uerbum Dei et timorem eius. Nam sperabat illos ad fidem Christi uenturos, quia gentes erant, et hoc ordine conuersatus cum illis accipiebat ab eis fructum praedicationis, uictum uidelicet suae necessitatis.)

Conf. 19, p. 240, 18-241, 13. V₂.19; V₄.23; V₃.16; Prob I.6.7.

Et post triduum terram cepimus et uiginti octo¹ dies per desertum iter fecimus et cibus defuit illis et fames inualuit super eos et tunc² cepit gubernator mihi³ dicere: 'Quid est, Christiane? Tu dicis quia⁴ deus tuus magnus et omnipotens est. Quare ergo⁵ non potes pro nobis orare?⁶ quia nos a⁷ fame periclitamur; difficile est enim ut aliquem hominem⁸ unquam⁹ uideamus'¹⁰. Tunc confidenter dixi illis¹¹: 'Conuertimini¹² ex fide¹³ ex toto corde ad Dominum Deum meum¹⁴, quia nihil est impossibile¹⁵ illi, ut¹⁶ hodie cibum mittat uobis¹⁷ in uiam uestram usque dum satiemi¹⁸, quia ubique habun-

P. 240, 4-14: 1 sic V₂: de mercede nauis Prob. (unde nauigare Patr.) 2 appetas ire V₂^H: ibis V₂^β. Prob. 3 tugurium V₂^β. 4 consummassem V₂^H. Prob. 5 clamantem V₂. 6 te recepimus (recipiemus H) V₂.

P. 240, 18-241, 13: 1 uiginti quatuor V₃-g^{Tin}. 2 et V₂+tunc V₄. J. 3 hic ordo uerborum in V₂^H: illi(ei) gub. V₂^β. V₃. 4 om V₂^β. 5 om V₂. 6 non — orare V₂, cf Prob; alii alia. 7 nos V₂^H + a V₂^β: om cett. 8 hominem Prob: -num V₄. desunt cett. 9 unquam Prob solus. 10 difficile — uideamus om V₄. V₃. 11 Tunc — illis restitui ex W. V₃; confidenter (V₄) uidetur fuisse lectio fontis W, cf adnotationem sequentem. 12 confitemini V₂. confitemur V₄. 13 ex (in V₂) fide om J. 14 nostrum V₄. om V₂. 15 impossibile est V₂, cf V₄; V₃. 16 et V₂^H. 17 cibum mittat uobis scripsi cum W: cibum mittet uobis V₂^H. uobis cybum mittat V₄. mittat cibum uobis V₂^β. cibum mittat Prob. mittat uobis cibum V₃. 18 usque-satiemi om J.

dat¹⁹ illi'. Et adiuuante Deo ita²⁰ factum est: ecce²¹ grex porcorum in uia ante oculos nostros apparuit²² et multos ex illis interfecerunt et ibi duas noctes manserunt et bene refecti . . . sunt²³ et . . . summas gratias egerunt Deo et ego honorificatus sum sub²⁴ oculis eorum²³ et ex hac die cibum habundanter habuerunt et²⁵ mel siluestre inuenerunt . . .²⁶ et unus ex illis dixit: 'Immolaticium est'. Deo gratias < . . . nihil gustavi: cf Muir^B nihil gustans; Prob ut . . . gustaret>.

Conf. 20, p. 241,14—22. V₄.24; *pauca admodum petenda sunt* U(BPh,J,
ex V₃.17; Prob. I.8; Muir p. 495,20—24; Muir)
r (Colg 121 a, b).

Sanctus autem Patricius de eo quod a satana temptatus sit ita disseruit dicens V₄. ut ipse dicit in libro epistolarum r^{Colg}:

Eadem uero nocte¹ eram² dormiens et fortiter temptauit me satanas, cuius³ memor ero quamdiu in hoc corpore fuero⁴, et⁵ cecidit⁶ super me ueluti saxum ingens⁷ et nihil membrorum meorum . . .⁸ Sed unde [in] me uenit ignoro <in spiritu r^{Colg}> ut Heliam uocarem? et inter haec in caelum [aspiciens] solem oriri uidebam et cum clamarem 'Helia Helia' totis uiribus meis, ecce splendor solis illius cecidit super me et statim discussit a me omnem grauitudinem et credo quod a Christo meo subuentus sum et spiritus tunc clamabat in me et spero quia sic erit in die pressurae meae.

Conf. 21, p. 242,3—7. V₃.18; Prob I.10; Muir p. 495,26—30. U(J,Muir)
Et iterum post multos annos capturam (dedi. Ea) prima nocte . . .

19 habundat V₂^{CD}: abundat *cett* (*deest* V₃). 20 ita V₄ *sola*. 21 <et> ecce V₂^H. V₄. (ut — esset V₂^β). 22 apparuit V₄. J. pascebat V₂^H. esset V₂^β. 23—23 *om* V₂. 24 sub Prob: in V₄. 23 et—et 25: V₃ *sola*. 26 *uerba quae hic excederunt cum sequentibus contaminantur in V₂*: et obtulit unus ex illis partem mellis Patricio. — Inde a (23) ordo enuntiatorum uariat in J.

P. 241,14—22: *Restitutio huius capitis dubia est, quia V₄ textum incertum praebet, V₃ partim, Prob totus ex Muir pendet, ex Colgano nihil certo concludi potest.* 1 sic Muir: quadam nocte V₄. eodem uero tempore nocte V₃. 2 *om* V₃. Muir. 3 temptationis s. l. add V₄. 4 cuius — fuero V₄ *sola*. 5 et V₃ *sola*. 6 enim add V₄. 7 saxa ingentia Muir (Prob); singularis numerus confirmatur lectionibus V₃. r^{Colg}. 8 sic V₃, ubi suppletur uerbum (ut) posset mouere: omnium membrorum meorum uires abstulit V₄, cf Muir (Prob). — Hinc usque ad finem capitis V₄ unicus fere testis est, adstipulantibus lectionibus nonnullis in V₃. Muir (Prob). r^{Colg}.

P. 242,3—7: *Lectiones V₃. Prob ex Muir pendentes non adferentur.*

mansi cum illis¹. Audire merui responsum diuinum dicens mihi²: 'Duobus³ mensibus eris cum illis'. Quod ita factum est: sexagesimo die liberauit me Dominus de manibus eorum.

U(Muir) *Conf.* 22, p. 242,8—9. Muir p. 495,30—32 (Prob I.10).

... praeuidit (nobis) cibum et ignem et siccitatem quotidie donec decimo die peruenimus ad homines ...

U(BPh, J, *Conf.* 23, p. 242,12—15. V₂.21; V₃.19; Prob I.11; Muir
Muir) p. 495,34—37.

Et iterum post paucos annos in Brittannia¹ (eram) cum parentibus meis², qui me ut filium susceperunt³ et .. rogauerunt me ut uel sic⁴ .. post tantas tribulationes ... numquam ab illis discederem.

U(BPh, J) P. 242,16—243,3. V₂.21; V₄.25; V₃.20.

Et ibi uidi { uisionem W
in somnis V₃ } <hoc est W> uirum uenientem quasi de Hiberione² Victoricum³ nomine⁴ cum epistolis innumerabilibus et dedit mihi unam ex his et legi principium epistolae⁵ hoc continens: 'Vox Hiberionum'⁶ et cum recitabam⁷ principium putabam ipso momento uocem ipsorum audire, qui erant iuxta siluam foclui⁴, quae est prope mare occidentale, et sic exclamauerunt⁹ quasi ex uno ore: 'Rogamus te, sancte puer¹⁰, ut uenias et adhuc ambules inter nos', et ualde compunctus sum corde et amplius non potui legere et sic expergefactus sum agens Deo gratias quod¹¹ post plurimos¹² annos praestitit illis Dominus secundum clamorem illorum.¹³

1 mansi cum illis V₃ sola. 2 dicens sibi Prob: sibi dicens Muir^B. V₃ deest. 3 tantum add J.

P. 242,12—15: V₃ partim, Prob totus ex Muir pendet. 1 in patria sua Muir. 2 apud parentes suos Muir (Prob). 3 receperunt V₂^P. Muir^B. 4 sic V₂β. V₃. Muir^B. (adhuc Prob): modo Patr. (om uel sic V₂^H. Muir^N.)

P. 242,16—243,3: 1 uenientem quasi V₃ sola. 2 hiberione V₂: hibernione V₃ΓGr. hibernia V₄. V₃π^α (hibernio H). 3 Victorem V₄. 4 Vict. nomine om V₃. 5 om V₂^H. V₃; ex V₄ nihil sequitur. 6 hibern(i)ensium V₃(V₄). 7 cum recitabam restitui: dum recitabat V₂β. cum recitaret V₂^H, cf V₄. V₃. 8 fochlaich V₃Γ. foch(i)la V₃π leg foclut(h). 9 clamauerunt V₂β (cf clamorem V₄). V₃. 10 sancte puer <Patrici Dg> V₃π (sancte Patrici V₄): sanctum puerum V₂. (+ Patricium) V₃Γ. 11 hic V₃ desinit. — quod: quoniam: V₂^H. om V₂β. 12 multos V₂. 13 eorum V₄.

INDICES

Cum indicibus quos confeceram plenariis spatium non suppeteret, indicem nominum et rerum quantum fieri poterat breuiavi, indicem grammaticum intactum reliqui. Semper fere satis uisum est C(onfessionis) et E(pistulae) capita, D(ictorum) et F(ragmentorum) numeros adscribere; ubi aliqua dubitatio oriri possit paginae uersusque indicantur. Ad locos sacrae scripturae typis, ut dicunt, italicis referimus. Voces a Vulgata alienae cruce (†) signantur; quibus, si in Vetere Latina repperi, siglum (VL) additur. Locos Vulgatae unicos libro capite uersu appositis indicaui.

I. INDEX LOCORVM

1. LOCI BIBLICI

Loci expressis uerbis uel fere uerbatim laudati asterisco () signantur.*

Gen	12, 1.....	E 10	2 Par	6,37.....	C 3.33
	10.....	C 19	2 Esdr	11,25.....	C 53
	24,40.....	C 17	Tob	12, 7.....	*C 5
	26, 5.....	C 1	Iob	20,15.16.26..	*E 8
	37,21.....	C 21	Ps	5, 7.....	*C 7
	41,34.....	C 53		7,10.....	C 57
Ex	4,10.....	C 11		13, 4.....	E 5
	20, 6.....	C 46		17,38.....	C 28
	13.17	(E 9)		18, 4.....	C 9
Deut	5,17.21	(E 9)		30, 6.....	C 56
	10,17.....	C 56		33, 4.5.7....	C 34
	24,15.....	C 26		38, 5.....	C 36
	28,48.....	(C 27)		45,11	C 34
1 Reg	12, 2.....	C 48		49,15.....	*C 5. cf C 20
	3.....	*C 50		52, 5.....	E 5
2 Reg	7,18.....	*C 34		54,23.....	*C 55
4 Reg	14,10.....	C 19		59, 8.....	*E 20
1 Par	21, 3.....	C 26		64, 4.....	E 16

67, 3.4	E 19	Ier	4,19	C 2
68, 9	E 16		9,16	C 1
15	C 12		16,16	*C 40. cf E 11
70,17	C 44.48		19	*C 38
87,16	C 44.48		31,15	(E 15)
88, 6	C 3	Bar	1,22	C 2
37	C 60	Ez	18,20; 33,12.	E 16
94, 9	C 34	Dan	3,51	C 23
107, 8	*E 20		87	E 7
108,17	C 23		6, 5	C 27
115,12	*C 57		7,13	C 23.29
117,13	C 26		27	C 3
22	C 29		8,27	C 25
118,60	C 43.46.57		9,12	*C 3
67	C 12	Os	1,10; 2,1.21.	C 40
75	C 27		14, 1	C 18
111	C 61	Ioel	2,12.13 . . .	C 2.19
112	C 11		28,29	*C 40
126	*E 5	Hab	1, 5	C 25
Prou 10, 1			2, 6	*E 8
= 15,20	*C 47	Zach	2, 8	*C 29
17, 6	cf C 47	Mal	2,10	*E 16
Eccle 4,13	C 12		3,13	C 19
Sap 1,11	*C 7		4, 2.3	*E 17
3, 8	E 19	2 Mac	3,34	cf C 34
5, 1.15	E 19	Matth	2,18	E 15
8, 2	C 44.48		3, 4	C 19
Eccli 3,13	cf C 47		4,19	*C 40
4,29	*C 9		7,15	E 5
7,16	*C 11		8,11	*C 39.*E 18
9,17	*E 12		10,19.20 . . .	*C 20
28,27	C 9		12,30	*E 11
29,30	C 37		36	*C 7
33,10	C 34		13,15	C 36
34,23.24	*E 8		15,32	C 19
28	*E 11		16,19	*E 6
Is 25, 1	C 3		23	C 36
29, 9	C 25		26	*E 8
32, 4	*C 11		27	C 4.61
42,25	C 1			E 20
43,21	C 58		17,20	C 19
49, 6	*C 38		18, 7	*C 48
59,13	C 1		18	*E 6

	20,22.....	C 57		29.....	C 31
	24,14.....	C 34.*40		37.....	C 23
	25,40.....	C 56		38.....	C 4
	28,18.....	cf C 4		8,10.....	cf C 13
	19,20.....	*C 40		13.....	C 25
Marc	1, 6.....	C 19		10,24.....	C 52
	17.....	*C 40		13,47.....	C 1.11.*38
	5,30.....	C 30			E 6
	8,38.....	C 61. E 20		50.....	C 48. cf E 1
	16,15.16.....	*C 40.*E 20		15,18.....	C 45
Luc	1,17.....	C 41		16,14.....	C 2
	29.....	C 25		18,25.....	C 16
	37.....	*C 19		19,16.....	C 19
	48.....	C 2		20,22.23.....	C 43
	49.....	C 12		24.....	C 55
	5, 6; 6,17..	C 40		28.....	cf C 58
	8, 5.....	C 59		29.....	E 5
	46.....	C 30		22, 3.....	C 10
	9,25.....	*E 8	Rom	1,14.15.....	C 37
	10,30.....	C 19		32.....	*E 14
	11,23.....	*E 11		2, 6.....	*C 4
	13,29.....	*C 39 (D)		24.....	C 48
	15,18.....	C 43		5,20.....	E 15
	21,16.....	C 6		6,23.....	E 10
	23,46.....	C 56		7,24.....	C 20
	24,19.....	C 13		8, 7.....	C 44
	42.....	C 19		11.....	C 33
	45.....	C 2		16.17.....	C 4.59
Ioh	4,10.....	C 14		26.....	*C 25
	44.....	*E 11		29.....	C 59
	8,34.....	*E 4		30.....	E 5
	43.....	C 9		34.....	C 25
	44.....	*E 4		9,25.26.....	*C 40
	10,16.....	E 11		10, 2.....	E 1
	29.....	C 32		11, 4.....	C 17.21
	12,34.....	C 60			29.35
	49.....	E 15		36.....	*C 59
	13,37.....	C 37		12, 1.....	C 34
	14,26.....	C 46		3.6.....	C 14
	20,28.....	C 4		11.....	C 16
Act	1, 4.....	C 39		15.....	*E 15
	2, 5.....	C 3		13, 9.....	*E 9
	17.18.....	*C 40		14, 6.....	C 36

	10..... C 8		20.....*C 56.*E 5
	12..... cf C 7.8	Phil	2,10.11*C 4
1 Cor	15,24..... C 53		12..... C 8
	4, 3..... C 55		15..... C 14
	7..... E 1		16..... E 17
	15..... E 16, cf 2		30..... E 1
	5,11..... E 7		4,13..... C 30
	10,28.....*C 19	Col	2, 9..... C 34
	12,11..... C 33	1 Thess	2, 5..... C 54
	26.....*E 15		10
	13, 5.....*E 11		(= 3,13; 5,23) . C 13
	9..... C 44	2 Thess	2,16..... C 14
	15,10..... E 1	1 Tim	1,12..... C 30
	43..... C 59		5,21..... C 61. E 20
2 Cor	1,12..... C 48	2 Tim	1, 9..... C 45
	17..... E 10 (bis)		2, 9..... C 37
	23..... C 31		4, 1..... C 61. E 20
	3, 2.3*C 11		7.....*C 44
	5,10..... C 8		16..... C 26
	14..... C 13	Tit	1, 2..... C 45.54
	7, 2..... C 48		3, 5.6 C 4
	10..... cf E 13	Heb	3,12..... C 2
	8, 9..... C 55		10,23..... C 54
	16..... E 11		12,28.....*C 13
	11, 6..... C 49	Iac	2,11..... E 18
	10..... E 1		4,15.....*C 43
	27..... C 27	1 Petr	4,18.....*E 18
	12, 1..... C 3		19..... C 56
	2.3*C 24	2 Petr	1,13..... C 20
	14..... cf E 11		15.....*E 14
	15..... C 37.51		3, 1..... E 1
	13, 2..... C 47		13..... C 39
Gal	1, 4..... C 55	1 Ioh	2, 1.....*C 25
	20..... C 31		17.....*C 60
	2, 6..... C 56		3,14.15*E 9
	18..... cf E 11		16.....*C 24
	5,17..... C 44	Apoc	2,23..... C 57
Eph	1,14..... C 4		19, 5..... C 13
	3,16..... C 25		21, 4.....*E 17
	4, 5..... E 16		8.....*E 18
	6..... E 11.16		22, 5.....*E 17
	6, 5..... C 8		15.....*E 18

2. LOCI NON BIBLICI

[AUGUSTINUS] Sermo 233,1	C 4
AUXENTIUS Symbolum	C 4
CARTHAGINIENSIS SYNODUS can. 5	C 10
CYPRIANUS De orat. domin. 13	C 59
24	E 9
Epist. 59,2	E 6
GUILLELMUS MALMESBURIENSIS Vita	
S. Patricii, Liber I:	
LELAND Collectanea II. 236	C 1.2
237	C 52
HILARIUS Contra Auxentium 14	C 4
De synodis 38	C 4
INNOCENTIUS [Augustinus] Epist. 182,7	E 21
IONAS Vita S. Columbani I.19	E 8
LELAND Iohannes v. Guillelmus Malmesburiensis	
MUIRCHÚ Vita S. Patricii I.1	C 1
7	C 40
PATRICIUS Dictum 2	E 17
PATRICIUS, Auxilius, Iserninus, can. 12	E 7
[PATRICIUS], Synodus II, can. 1	E 7
2	E 8
PROBUS Vita S. Patricii I.1	C 1
SECUNDINUS Hymnus in S. Patricium:	
11	E 1
13 sq.	C 40
17 sq.	C 37
40	C 34
60	E 1
73	C 58
87	C 4
92	E 18
SIRMIENSE SYMBOLUM	C 4
TÍRECHÁN Breviarium de S. Patricio:	
p. 302,14 sq. Stokes	C 17
p. 310,1—7 Stokes	C 53
VICTORINUS PETAVIONENSIS Comment. in Apocal. 11,1	C 4
VITA S. FURSEI (I) 2	C 36.43
14	E 8

II. INDEX NOMINVM ET RERVVM

Abraam, Abraham C 39. E 18.

adolescens capturam dedi C 10. cf 1.15.

altare: super a. iactabant ex ornamentis suis C 49.

apostolus = Paulus C 25. = Petrus E 18.

?bannauem: uico bannauem (banauem Φ) tabur(-ber- DVΔ)niae C 1.

baptismus, -um E 16. baptizare (*Hibernos*) C 14.40.42.50.51. baptizati a
Corotico capti E 3.7.17.19.21. cf E 14.

barbarus: inter -as gentes habito E 1.

Brittanniae (*semper* in -is); C 23.32.43. *de scriptura u app crit.*

Calpornius pater Patricii C 1. (filius Kalfurni F 2).

candidus: neophyti in ueste -a E 3.

canes nautarum C 19.

castitas religionis i e puritas doctrinae et disciplinae C 44.

Christianus: fratribus -is C 49. consuetudo Romanorum Gallorum -orum
E 14. Coroticus persecutor -orum E 2.12.13.15. ut -i ita ut Romani
sitis D 3 a.

Christus passim. uirgo (uirgines) xpi C 41.42.49. E 12. Coroticus cum suis
rebellatores xpi E 19. adoramus solem uerum xpm C 60. Christe lession
(bis) D 3 a. (Hibernenses) in xpo confirmaui E 2. genui E 16.

ciuis: (*de militibus Corotici*) non dico -bus meis neque -bus scorum Roma-
norum E 2.

†clerici C 38.40.50.51. E 3.

comites Patricii C 52.

Concessa mater Patricii F 2.

confessio scriptura Patricii C 61.62.

confirmo: quos ego ... in xpo -aui E 2.

confiteor: uerbum quod confessus fueram antequam essem diaconus C 27.

continentes C 42.

Coroticus: E 2.6.12.19.21.

credo de fide xpiana passim. credentes C 4.39.44.62.

†crismati neophyti E 3.

crucifigo E 7.

†Cyrie (Curie) lession D 3 a (bis).

decorione patre nascor E 10.

defensio Patricii C 32 (dissensionem P).

desertum: per d. iter fecimus C 19.22.

Deus passim. dm uerum ignorabam C 1. cf 27.36. a do accepi id quod
sum E 1. uiuo do meo docere gentes E 1. timorem di habui ducem
itineris D 1. cf C 17. quos ego in numero do genui E 2. cf C 38. auc-

torem, testem dm *inuocat Patricius* C 35.54 (cf 31). E 1. — *Coroticus* dm non ueretur E 6. (resipiscant, satis faciant do E 7.21.) — una Scotta nobilis responsum accepit a nuntio di C 42. — non est alius ds praeter dm *xpianorum* C 4. confitemur et adoramus unum dm in trinitate sacri nominis C 4. — famulus di E 21. serui di E 7. filii di *xpiani* C 4.40.41.59. E 9.15. uirgines di C 42. *piae formulae*: do gratias C 19.23.42. E 17. D 2.3 a. adiuuante do C 19. fauente do E 5. gubernante do C 37.

diaconus: patrem habui Calpornium -um C 1 (decurionem *MacNeill*). uerbum quod confessus fueram antequam essem d. C 27.

disertus: desertis breuitate sermone explicare nequeo C 10. epistola ... non deserta *Patricius* C 11.

distinguere inter bonum et malum C 2. in mensura fidei trinitatis C 14. †dominicati rethorici C 13.

Dominus *passim*. fratres dni *fideles* E 21. plebs dni *Hiberni* C 41. cf E 5. sci dni C 43. *piae formulae*: si dns mihi indulgeret C 37. si dns uoluerit C 43. fauente dno C 44. donante dno C 51.

ecclesia *uniuersalis* C 48. E 15. aeclessia Scottorum immo Romanorum D 3. omnis aeclesia quae sequitur me D 3 a.

elemosinas *excommunicatorum* recipi non debeat E 7.

episcopatus *Patricii* C 26.32.

episcopus: -um me esse fateor E 1.

epistola *ad milites Corotici prior* E 3. -ae Victorici C 23. qui sumus ... e. xpi C 11.

Eua mortem tradidit uiro suo E 13.

euangelium *praedicat Patricius Hibernis* [C 40 (bis)].34.37.61. E 6.

exter: ad -as partes C 51. genti -ae E 10.14.

famem patitur *Patricius* C 19(bis).27.

ferrum: me ipsum -o uinxerunt C 52.

fidelis = *fidei xpianae addictus* C 1.

fides *xpiana* C 14.16.18.30.44.47.48.

filius, filia: filii Scottorum et -ae regulorum C 41. E 12. (= a *Patricio baptizati*) C 14. E 1.16. cf ecclesia plorat et plangit filios et -as suas E 15. *Christus filius di*: C 4.40. E 21. *xpiani filii di*: C 4.40.41. E 9.15. *peccatores filii zabuli* E 4.

Focluti (D) u Vocluti.

Franci *gentiles* E 14.

fratres *Patricii i e xpiani* C 6.14.47.49. E 16. *xpiani fratres dni* E 21. = *clerici, monachi* C 32.43.

fuga: conuersus sum in -am C 17.

Galliae: C 43. D 1.

Galli *xpiani* E 14.

gens *Hiberna* C 13.15.61. E 10. (*plur:*) C 37.48. E 1. — gentes = *pagani* C 18.34. E 1.14. uendis illos -ti *exterae* ignorant *dm* E 14 (257,13).

genus: de -ere nostro qui ibi nati sunt, *i e xpiani*, C 42.

†gerulus litterarum E 21.

gradus episcopatus C 32.

gratia *di* C 3.15.38.42.46. — gratias agere C 19.30.34.46. Deo gratias *u Deus*.

gratis: ministerium *g.* distribui C 50.

gubernator *navis* C 18.19.

Helias C 20.

Hiberione *acc abl* C 1.16.23.28.41.62. E 1.5.10.12.

Hiberionaci: uox -cum C 23. H. sumus *scripsi pro* Hiberia nati sumus E 16.

Hibernus: ueneram ad -as gentes C 37.

homo: intermisi -nem cum quo fueram sex annis C 17. pretium quindecim -num distribui illis C 53. — super interiorem hominem C 25. — *xpm* -nem factum C 4.

honos: scriptum sine -re C 29.

hora: in una h. *Patricius peccauit* C 27. omni h. orationis D 3 a.

hostes = *gentiles* C 46.

Iacob C 39. E 18.

iacto: *mulieres* super altare iactabant ex ornamentis suis C 49.

ibi *de Hibernia*: 235,14. 239,22.26 (*bis*). 245,9. 246,21. 247,3. 248,18. Cf K. MÜLLER, *Der heilige Patrick*, Göttingen 1931, p 85.

indulgeo: -sit *ds Patricio* C 46. (*'to grant'*): *episcopatum* C 32. aliquid de praeda E 3.

†ingenuus fui secundum carnem E 10. (cf †ingenuitatem C 37.) uenundati -i homines E 15.

inspirat *ds* C 13. E 21.

insolae in mari Terreno D 1.

internicionem cotidie sperat *Patricius* C 55.

Isaac C 39. E 18.

Italia: *iter Patricii* per Gallias atque -iam D 1.

iudico: qui iudicabant (indicabant *δ*) per omnes regiones C 53.

ius: qui ... iura ... combiberunt C 9.

Latinus: quod ego -um exposui E 20.

latrunculi *milites Corotici* E 12.

legatio (*i e missio*) *Patricii* C 46.56. E 5.

lex: legis periti C 13. per totam legem (*i e sacram scripturam*) carpere testimonia E 9. transgressor legis *Coroticus* E 18.

litterae sacrae C 9. gerulus litterarum E 21.

lupanar: quasi in l. tradis membra *xpi* E 14.

- mammella: sugere -as C 18.
 mare occidentale C 23. in -ri Terreno D 1.
 mercedem dabat *Patricius* filiis *règum* C 52.
 milites Corotici E 2.
 minae: terrores et -as perferunt *uirgines xpi* C 42.
 minister *uerbi Patricius* C 56.
 ministerium seruitutis meae C 49. m. gratis distribui C 50.
 †monachus: filii Scottorum . . . -i C 41. E 12.
 mortale crimen auaritia E 9.
 munera multa mihi offerebantur C 37. cf 49.
 neophyti *Patricii* E 3.
 nobilis: una benedicta Scotta genetiuā n. C 42.
 occidentalis: mare -e C 23.
 Odissus(?): Potiti <filii -i D in *mg*> C 1.
 officium: *ds* elegit me ad hoc o. C 56.
 oratio ('*prayer*') C 16.18.24.25. D 3 a. (orare '*to pray*' etiam C 19.26.58.)
 ordinare clericos C 38. cf 50.51.
 ornamenta *mulierum* C 49.
 Osee C 40.
 oues, ouile de *xpianis* E 11.12.
 paenitentia E 7. paeniteant E 21.
 parentes *Patricii* C 23.36.43. E 1. persecutionem patiuntur *uirgines xpi* a
 -ibus C 42.
 pasco: pecora -ebam C 16.
 pater *Patricii* C 1. E 10. — *ds* pater *passim*.
 patria *Patricii* C 17.36.43. E 1.
 Patricius peccator C 1.62. E 1. (F 2.) indoctus C 12.62. E 1. inscius C 34.
 stultus C 13. *sim passim*. contempnor aliquibus E 1. ualde despicior
 E 12. *Patricii* insidiae, labores C 35. legatio C 46.56. E 5. peccata
 C 10.26. pericula C 35.51. cf 46.
 pecora pascebam C 16.
 perennis (Bar 5,7) uita E 10. poena E 4.13.
 persecutio *xpianorum in Hibernia* C 42. cf C 48. -nes *Patricii* C 37. E 6.
 Picti apostatae E 2.15. traditor *xpianorum* in manus -orum E 12.
 piissimus *ds* C 35.
 plebs *dni Hiberni* C 38.41.58. E 5. *epistola Patricii* legatur-coram cunctis
 -bus E 21.
 porcus: grex -orum C 19.
 Potitus *auus Patricii* C 1.
 praedicare euangelium C 34.37.40 (*bis*). E 6.
 praemia dabam regibus C 52. mulierculas baptizatas p. distribuunt *milites*
Corotici E 19.

presbyter: Potiti -i C 1. misi epistolam cum sco -o quem ego ex infantia docui E 3.

probo: fides mea -ata est coram do et hominibus C 30.

redemptor: in gloria xpi ihu -is nostri C 59.

regnum: hoc euangelium -i C 40. in -o caelorum E 18. aeterna -a E 18.
ob miserum r. temporale E 19.

regulus: filiae -orum *Hiberniae* C 41. E 12.

religio: castitas -nis non fictae C 44.

renasci in *dm* C 38.

responsum '*divine message*' C 17.21.29.32.35.42.

retia tendere *allegorice* C 40.

retribuere, retributio C 3.11.12.57.

rex: praemia dabam regibus C 52.

†rhetoricus: dominicati rethorici C 13.

Romani: ciuibus scorum -orum E 2. consuetudo -orum Gallorum xpianorum
redimere captiuos E 14. aeclessia Scottorum immo -orum D 3. ut xpiani
ita ut -i sitis D 3a.

sacer: in trinitate -i nominis C 4. -as litteras C 9.

sacerdotibus nostris non oboedientes fuimus C 1. *Coroticus* non ueretur
-es E 6.

sacrificium offerre C 34. E 8.

saecularis: ante tempora -ia C 45.

saeculum C 4.40.55.60. de -o recessistis E 17. D 2. per omnia -a -orum
C 60. cf E 19.

salus *animae* C 1.28.51.

sanctus = *timoratus* E 2.13.14. sci dni C 43.

satanas C 20.

satis do faciant *Coroticus cum suis* E 7.

scelus, sceleratus *de Corotico* E 17.19.

Scotta C 42. Scotti C 41. E 2.12. D 3.

scriptula: sperauerim uel dimidio -ae C 50.

scriptura *Patricii, i e Confessio* C 9.62.

senectus: adpeto in -te mea *litteris studere* C 10.

seniores *Patricii* C 26.37.

sermo: sermones (-em PA) illorum numquam mutarunt *obtrectatores Patricii*
C 9. s. noster translatus est in linguam alienam C 9. qualiter sum ego
in -bus instructus C 9.

seruitium: maxime laborant quae -o detinentur C 42.

seruitus: ds de -te liberauit *Patricium* C 35. redigi in -tem *timet Patricius*
C 55. xpiani in -te (-tem V) redacti E 15. — *translate*: ministerium
-tis meae C 49.

seruus: deuastauerunt -os et ancillas domus patris mei E 10. s. sum in xpo genti exterae E 10.
 silua: in -is et monte manebam C 16. iuxta -am Vocluti C 23.
 solidus: cum tot milia -orum ad redimendos captiuos E 14.
 spiritus: sps scs *passim*. sps iam tunc clamabat pro me C 20. effitiatus est ut sit sps (episcopus DRFC) C 25. sicut sps suggerebat C 46. —
plur: audiebam quosdam -us psallentes in me F 1.
 (taburnia:) uico †bannauem taburniae† C 1.
 tempto: -auit me satanas C 20. -atus sum ab aliquantis senioribus C 26.
 tyrannis *Corotici* E 6.
 Tyrrhenus: in mari Terreno D 1.
 uendis illos genti exterae E 14. -di nobilitatem meam E 10.
 uenundati ingenui homines E 15.
 uerbum: occasionem inuenerunt me aduersus uerbum C 27.
 ueritas xpi E 1. doctrina, fides -tis C 9.48.
 uestis: neophyti in -e candida E 3.
 Victoricus C 23.
 uicus †bannauem taburniae† C 1.
 uiduae et continentes C 42.
 uillula *Calpornii* C 42. cf E 10.
 uincio: me ipsum ferro -xerunt C 52.
 uirgo, -ines xpi, di C 41.42.49. E 12.
 uirtus: ueni in -te di C 17. sensi in me -tem non paruam C 30.
 uisus: uidi in -u noctis C 23.29.
 Vocluti, iuxta siluam V. C 23.
 uox Hiberionacum C 23. uox illa laudabilis Curie lession D 3 a. uoces a *Patricio auditae* C 17.23.
 zabulus E 4.

III. INDEX GRAMMATICUS

Materiam ita disposuimus ut partes orationis singulas suo ordine tractantes formationem rectionem syntaxim unius cuiusque partis uno tenore absolueremus. Praecedunt pauca quae ad rem grammaticam in uniuersum spectant; sequuntur nonnulla de compositione clausularum et uocabulorum, et de Patricii genere dicendi.

Orthographia: calciamenti C 50. Calpornium C 1. condempnabitur C 40. E 20. †crismati E 3. Cyrie, Curie D 3a. decorione E 10. desertis C 10 (dis- VRG). deserta C 11. diliciae C 55. †exaga⟨e⟩llias C 14. expectamus, expectare C 4.59. cf inextinguibilis E 8. exultabitis E 17. exultatione C 61. flagrabat E 3 (frag- F). †gaudibundus C 24 (gaudeb- PΔ).

†genetiua C 42. habunde C 4; habundat C 19; habundanter habuerunt C 19; *sed* abundat E 15. (*u app crit.*) incederem C 9. inchoauit C 43. inmunda C 41. insolis D 1. internicionem C 55 (*u app crit.*) iocundare E 13. loquela C 9. mammellas C 18. (moniuit [Σ?] C 2.) (munstrauit [φ?] C 45.) neglegentia C 46. paululum C 17. percipimus (*perf*) E 16 (P8). pos tergum C 46. proselitus *etc* C 26.59. E 1. †quatenus (quatinus DFD₂. ut V) C 10. recognoscit (*fut*) E 18 (P8). †rethorici C 13. †scriptulae C 50. spiritaliter C 4. sumsit (D) C 38. †tegoriolum (D) C 18 (tuguriolum ΦΥ). (in mari) Terreno D 1. uenundati E 15. zabulus E 4 (*bis*). — *Vide Praefationem III.2.*

abstracta pro concretis usurpantur, ubi Patricius de se loquitur: †paruitas mea C 1. per exhortationem paruitatis nostrae E 9. per †modicitatem meam C 50. — cf dns aperuit sensum incredulitatis meae ... qui respexit humilitatem meam et misertus est adolescentiae et ignorantiae meae C 2. qui saepe indulgit insipientiae meae neglegentiae meae C 46. sicut intimauit imperitiae meae E 20.

aduerbia minus usitata: †inlicitate C 44. — acriter C 18. aequaliter C 34. audenter C 31.33. breuiter C 33.61. constanter C 34. (19.) crudeliter E 3.7. diligenter C 40.51. (euidenter C 19 [VL].) fiducialiter C 14. fortiter C 18.20.25.26.33.42. frequentius C 53. grauiter E 4.15. impudenter E 15 (Ez 23,12). †incunctanter C 37. inenarrabiliter C 4. libentissime C 37.43.51. pariter E 4. qualiter (= ut, quomodo) C 9.35.48. similiter C 16. simpliciter C 47. spiritaliter C 4. uehementer C 8.10.46. uelociter C 11. †ueraciter C 13.

composita notabilia: coheres C 4.59. conseruus C 47. *u formatio nominum (h).* — †indefessus C 34. †indubitabilis C 34. †ineffabilis E 10.17. inenarrabilis C 25. inextinguibilis E 8. ingenitus C 4 (2 Mac 6,23). innumerabilis C 23. (inobediens [Φ] C 1.) inuisibilis C 4. — †incunctanter C 37. inenarrabiliter C 4. inlicitate C 44. — adleuo C 12. admiror (= miror) C 13.25. †combibo C 9. comedo C 59. E 8. decanto D 3 a. dehonesto C 32. derelinquo E 16. deseruio C 13. deuenio C 16.26.60. †effitior C 24.25. effor (*pro simplici*) C 33. enarro C 35. enutrio C 55. inlaqueo E 4. inquirō (-siui *dm*) C 33. intermitto C 17. percipio (baptismum) E 16. pertimeo C 10. peruenio C 51. praedestino E 6. †praefer C 10. rememoro C 2. rescio (*pro simplici*) E 5. superimpendo C 53. — *praeifixum cum significatione non congruit:* praenuntio (= pro-) C 34. praepono (pro-Δ₂) C 44. praeuideo (= pro-) C 22. prolongo (= elongo) E 15. suppleo (= compleo) C 34. — profuga *subst* C 12. E 1.

recompositio: detractare (-trect- G') C 49. — *u app crit ad 243,15; 246,4; 250,20.*

deminutiua: latrunculus E 12. muliercula E 19 (2 Tim 3,6). munusculum C 49. pupillus C 35. regulus C 41. E 12. †seruulus C 15. †tegoriolum (tuguriolum ΦΥ) C 19. uillula C 1. — paululum C 17. pauperculus C 35. pusillus C 13.62.

Graeca et Hebraica: amen in *doxologiis* C 60. E 19.21. angelus C 61. E 8.20. (sed nuntius di C 42.) apostata E 2.15. apostolus C 25. E 18.20. blasphemus C 48 (bis). †crismati E 3. Christus, Christianus *passim*. †Cyrus (Curie) lession, Christe lession D 3 a. daemonium E 2. diaconus C 1.27. draco E 8. ecclesia C 48. E 15. D 3.3 a. episcopus E 1. euangelium *passim*. gehenna E 4. (idiota C 35 *ex coniectura* N. J. D. White.) idolum C 38.41. martyr E 18 (Apoc 17,6). †monachus C 41. E 12. neophytus E 3 (1 Tim 3,6). paradus E 17 = D 2. presbyter C 1. E 3. propheta *passim*. propheta C 40. proselitus C 26.59. E 1. psallo F 1. psalmus C 7. rethoricus C 13. satanas C 20. scandalizor C 49. zabulus E 4 (bis). zelus E 1. — *Accedunt uoces Romanis usitatae* epistola C 11. 23. E 3. (sed litterae E 21). tyrannis E 6.

Voces non biblicae (ἄπαρα λεγόμενα *asterisco signantur*): adulor, cachinnus, censeo, crismati, clericus (5), combibo, credulitas, Cyrus (2 in D 3 a), *dominicus, *effitior (2), exagaellia, fraticida, gaudibundus, gerulus, grauitudo, incunctanter, indefessus, indubitabilis, ineffabilis (2), infamo, ingenuitas, ingenuus (2), illicitate, inmerito, intimo, inuerbis, labes, letalis, maestus, mirificus, modicitas, monachus (2), nuncupo (2), obsto, paruitas (2), patricida, perennitas, perlego, postmodum (5), praeior, *profuga (2), quandoque, *rebellator, rethoricus, rusticus, sanguilentus, scriptula, seruulus, tegoriolum, trinitas (2).

congruentia: tanta beneficia et tantam gratiam quam mihi dns praestare dignatus est C 3. sermo et lognola nostra translata est C 9. ecclesia plorat . . . filios et filias suas quas (quos v) adhuc gladius nondum interfecit E 15. — hoc (haec V) erit gloria mea C 47. (sed haec est retributio nostra C 3. haec est confessio mea C 62. quae est uocatio mea C 34.) — peccator et impius <et V> transgressor legis ubi se recognoscet? E 18 (u app bibl). — u *pronomen relatiuum*.

constructio ad sensum: audiui responsum dicentem mihi C 17.21.29 (dicens G' C 17.29; v C 21.29). legi principium epistolae continentem C 23. erga gentem illam qui (quae v) me aliquando ceperunt E 10. per omnes regiones quos ego frequentius uisitabam C 53. ad gentes illas inter quas (quos P) habito . . . neminem illorum circumueni C 48. precor credentibus et timentibus dm quicumque dignatus fuerit C 62. quid dereliquistis unusquisque proximum suum? E 16. sit gerulus litterarum harum, ut nequaquam subtrahatur E 21. profecta est nauis de loco suo et locutus sum ut haberem unde nauigare cum illis C 18.

formatio nominum (*exempla notabiliora tantum adferimus*): a) adiutor C 46. debitor C 38. gubernator C 18.19. peccator *passim*. piscator C 40. E 11. †rebellator E 19. traditor E 12. uenator C 40. E 11. — transgressor E 18. — b) cogitatus C 55. conspectus (in -u) C 44. E 8. episcopatus C 26.32. obitus C 14. transitus C 58. — c) †anxietas C 27 (VL, Gen 3,16 = Hier Ep 22,18). breuitas C 10 (2 Mac 2,29.32). calamitas C 55. caritas C 13.33. E 12. castitas C 44. claritas C 59. †credulitas C 38. cupiditas E 9. diuinitas C 34. humilitas C 2.13. ignobilitas C 56. incredulitas C 2.27. infirmitas C 25. †ingenuitas C 37. iniquitas C 33. E 16. immortalitas C 4. †modicitas C 50. nobilitas E 10 (2 Mac 6,23). nuditas C 27. †paruitas C 1. E 9. paupertas C 55. †perennitas C 49. qualitas C 6. †rusticitas C 46. siccitas C 22. sinceritas C 48. †trinitas C 4.14. utilitas C 37.38. E 10. — d) constantia E 19. diligentia E 12. ignorantia C 2.62. imperitia C 10. E 20. inscientia C 11. insipientia C 46. neglegentia C 46. paenitentia E 7. perseuerantia C 58. pigritia C 16 (Eccle 10,18). reuerentia C 13. — e) animatio C 1 (VL). cessatio C 46. conculcatio C 26. consummatio C 40. correptio C 3. dilectio E 1. dubitatio C 59. excusatio C 10. exhortatio E 9. exultatio C 61. peregrinatio C 37. E 17. persecutio C 37.42.48. E 6. profectio C 30. retributio C 3.11. rusticatio C 11. temptatio C 34. tribulatio C 5.23. uocatio C 34. — f) †grauitudo C 20. sollicitudo E 11. — g) captura (-am dedi) C 1.10.21. creatura C 40.(59: v). mensura C 14. scriptura C 9.62. sepultura C 59. — h) homicida E 9 (*bis*).18.21. †patricida †fratricida E 5.

genus nominis dies: *est generis masculini sexies* (242,9. 243,19. 244,12. 248,11. 251,4. alio [-a Φ] die 240,20), *feminini duodecies* (sexta ab hac die 248,14. postera die qua 254,16), *incerti 13^{ies}* (*octies in plurali*).

declinatio nominum: baptismum (*acc.*) E 16. colubris (*gen*) E 8. uox Hiberionacum C 23. (domus *acc. plur.* E 13 [8: -os Pv].) (passus: -os P *ad* C 17.)

pluralis modestiae: sermo et loquela nostra C 9. doleo cur hoc meruimus C 32 (cf *Hier Epist 52,6,1*). non debeo abscondere donum di quod largitus est nobis in terra captiuitatis meae C 33 (*mihi dubium*). per exhortationem paruitalis nostrae E 9. *ceteri loci ubi pluralis numerus pronominis primae personae legitur, uelut C 42.52, ita interpretandi uidentur esse, ut Patricius de se et comitibus suis loquatur.*

pluralis nominum abstractorum: angustiae C 34. illecebrae C 44 (Prov 9,13). diuitiae et diliciae C 55. gemitibus C 25 (*bis*). impropria C 42. infirmitates C 25. iniquitatibus C 33. in pressuris C 34. tribulationes C 23.

pluralis nominis caelum: -orum C 55. E 18. -is C 4. E 6.

appositio: forte habebat ducenta milia passus C 17. (*sed* tot milia hominum C 1.14.50. tot milia solidorum E 14.) ubicumque (in quocumque v) loco (*om* G') fuero C 34. honorem spero ab aliquo uestro (D: honorem sperare uestrum ϕ) C 54. aliquid pusillum C 62. post paululum tempus C 17. — *in appositione constructio neglegitur:* expectamus aduentum ipsius . . . iudex uiuorum atque mortuorum C 4. et me quidem, detestabilis (-em Φ) huius mundi, . . . inspirauit C 13. ut uel sero paeniteant . . . — homicida (-ae G') erga fratres dni — et liberent captiuas E 21; cf Coroticus cum suis sceleratissimis — rebellatores xpi E 19. cotidie spero aut internicionem aut circumueniri . . . siue occasio cuiuslibet C 55. legi principium epistolae continentem Vox Hiberionacum (*ad instar orationis rectae*) C 23.

indeclinabilia: Hiberione *acc* C 1.16 (-em R).28 (-em Gv). E 10 (-em v). *abl* C 23.41.62. E 1.5.12. — milia (cum tot milia C 1. E 14); *sed* in milia milium C 46.

nominatiuus pendens: uerbum otiosum quod locuti fuerint homines reddent pro eo rationem C 7. et gubernator (PCG[?]: -ori *cett*) displicuit illi C 18. de genere nostro qui ibi nati sunt nescimus numerum eorum C 42.

genitiuus obiectiuus (*exempla notabilia tantum dabimus*): uenire in fidem ihu xpi C 18. notitiam di C 41. iniuria iustorum E 12. rebellatores xpi E 19. — *gen subi idem* (*per zeugma*) *obi*: post correptionem uel agnitionem di C 3.

genitiuus qualitatis: annorum eram tunc fere sedecim C 1 (*u commentarium*).

genitiuus qui dicitur inhaerentiae: in terra captiuitatis meae C 3.33. cibus panis E 5. uerbis adulationis E 14. sensum incredulitatis meae (cordis mei incredulitatis Φ) C 2.

genitiuus ex adiectiuo pendet: conformes futuri imaginis ipsius C 59.

genitiuus partitiuus: minimus omnium fidelium C 1. residuum aetatis meae C 43. ab aliquo illorum C 50. neminem illorum C 48. de defunctis filiorum di E 15. in longa terrarum E 15. aliquid boni C 59. (*sed* aliquid pusillum C 62.) nihil mali C 16. nihil membrorum meorum praeualens C 20. nihil horum C 55. quis sanctorum E 13. — *u praepositiones* (de, ex).

genitiuus pronominum substantiuorum personalis reflexiui interrogatiui relatiui indefiniti non exstat, determinatiui et demonstratiui (*ubi determinatiui uice fungitur*) *non usurpatur nisi cum ui possessiua aut partitiua.*
genitiuus ex uerbo pendet: consulatus (consolatus) est mei (D.r) C 2.

datiuus: peto illi (-um G') det mihi C 59. — *datiuus ethicus:* quod mihi pro his nesciebam . . . quid facerem C 46. — *datiuus auctoris* (*pro a*, ab

c abl): etsi contempnor aliquibus E 1 (*u app crit*). trucidati atque mac-tati gladio supradictis E 3. depraedantur ... supradictis latrunculis E 12. — *datiuus possessoris*: cui nomen Victoricus C 23 (*u app crit*). *alibi semper*: habere aliquid. Me, te *pro datiuo pronominis ante uerbum legitur*: quis me credit C 10. unde me (mihi DG'. *om v*) uenit ignaro in spu C 20 (*u app crit*). qui me imperauit C 43 (*per analogiam?*). memet ipsum (-o. F) non credo C 44. iniuria iustorum non te placeat E 12. qui te consentit (tecum sentit *v*) aut qui te (*om v*) communicat E 14.

accusatiuus: etsi ipsam etiam caream sepulturam (ipse .. -a G'. ipsa .. -a *v*) C 59. conuiuium (-o G') fruire (-i G'. facere *v*) E 13. pro quo legationem (-e G'*v*) fungor C 56. E 5 (*u app bibl*). — *accusatiuus nudus pro ad c acc*: peruenimus <ad Δ_2 > homines C 22 (*bis*). — *accus temporis*: uiginti et octo dies .. iter fecimus C 19.22. ibi duas noctes manserunt C 19. esse cum illis residuum aetatis meae C 43. — *u pro-nomen relatiuum*.

ablatiuus temporis pro accusatiuo: cum quo fueraui sex annis C 17. duobus mensibus eris cum illis C 21. ego uobiscum sum omnibus diebus C 40. *fortasse similiter accipiendum*: ea nocte prima ... mansi cum illis C 21.

ablatiuus instrumenti (usus insolentior tantum notabitur): sermone explicare C 10 (*u app crit*). dum clamarem 'Helia Helia' <totis *v*. V_4 > uiribus meis C 20. ut conuerterem toto corde ad dnm C 2. (*sed ex toto corde C 19; u app bibl*). *praeterea abl instr fere decies inuenitur*. — *abl causae*: una causa uenit ad nos C 42. non ut causa malitiae C 46. causa uestra C 51. (mea gratia C 37. E 11; mea ignorantia C 62 *nominatiui uidentur esse*). — *abl limitationis*: compunctus sum corde C 23. sancti et humiles corde E 7. alligatus spiritu C 43. E 10. — *abl modi*: pari modo C 9. quo modo C 18. nullo modo C 37. desertis breuitate sermone explicare nequeo C 10. fortiter orabat gemitibus C 25. sps postulat ... gemitibus C 25. maesto animo C 29. ritu hostili in morte uiuunt E 2. iubente Corotico hostili mente E 12.

ablatiuus absolutus: morte deuicta (deuicta morte Φ) C 4. crudeliter <per> paenitentiam effusis lacrimis E 7. praesente ipso Corotico E 21. adiuuante do C 19. donante dno C 51. fauente dno (do) C 44. E 5. gubernante do C 37. <ipso> (illo *v*. do s s G) iubente C 60. iubente Corotico E 12.

attractio casus inuersa: diuitias .. quas congregauit .. euomentur E 8.

commixtio casuum: 1. *accusatiuus pro datiuo*: nec numerum dierum noueram neque dm (*om P*) sapiebam C 36. — 2. *accusatiuus pro ablatiuo*: uidi in caelum (-o Δ) solem oriri C 20. ego uobis semper fruar in dm (do *P*) C 53. mendacibus periuris pars eorum in stagnum ignis aeterni E 18 (in stagno *VetLat. VULG*). *u indeclinabilia (milia)*. —

3. *ablatius pro accusatiuo*: dispersit nos in gentibus multis C 1. in caelis ad Patrem receptum C 4. effudit in nobis ... spm scm C 4. recordatus sum apostolo dicente C 25. teste (-em φ) do (dm vδ) habeo C 31. pergens in Brittanniis C 43. quare se mittit in periculo (-um Vδ) C 46. sperauerim ... uel dimidio (-um PG') scriptulae C 50. quos ego in numero (innumeros v. innumerus δ) do genui E 2. *u indeclinabilia* (Hiberione), *et app crit ad* 241,17.18. 251,10. 252,20. 257,25. — *acc et abl coniunguntur*: in labe (-em Gv) et in obprobrium non male deueni C 26. — *praeterea notiones mouendi ad locum et quiescendi in loco inter se confunduntur*: ut ... nusquam ab illis discederem C 23. ubique pergebam causa uestra C 51. ubi numquam aliquis peruenerat C 51. foris canes et uenefici et homicidae E 18 (*locum Apoc 22,15 male interpretatur*).

accusatiuus et ablatius adiectiui uel pronominis generis neutrius:

1. *sequitur genitiuus*: ab extremis terrae C 38 (*bis*). usque ad extremum terrae C 38. E 6. (usque ad ultimum terrae C 1.11.) in longa terrarum E 15. de medio eorum C 13. nihil membrorum meorum C 20. *sim uide s genitiuus partitiuus*. ad postremum orationis C 24.25. in ultimis terrae C 58. E 9. — 2. *sine genitiuo, nonnumquam ad instar aduerbii*: ad bonum C 17. non inmerito (merito δ) E 18. quod ... Latinum exposui E 20. quaeso plurimum E 7.21. in omnibus C 30.49 (*bis*). in minimo C 49. ad perfectum C 9. in posterum C 12. (in aeternum C 12.26. E 21. in futurum C 31.) quanto magis C 11. E 9. quippiam C 34 (*ex coniectura*). 49. quid prodest C 10. E 8. quid dereliquistis E 16. in secundis C 34. per singula C 35. E 9.

neutrum pronominis pro substantiuo: nihil horum pereor C 55. occasio cuiuslibet C 55.

subiectum uel obiectum uerbi subintellegendum est: flagrabat in fronte ipsorum (*i e chrisma*) E 3. — explicare nequeo C 10 (cf enumerare nequeo E 12.16). nos adpetere debemus C 11 (*refertur ad* C 10 [237,23. 238,2]). oportet distinguere C 14 (cf C 2 [236,1 sq]). illa die qua perueni C 18 (cf C 17 [240,3]). obtinui cum illis (*i e nauigationem, sim*) C 18. praestitit illis ... secundum clamorem illorum C 23. qui baptizarent populum indigentem et desiderantem (*i e baptismum*) C 40. insinuaui C 47 (*in obiectum uidetur esse C 46*). cogor zelo di et ueritas xpi excitauit (*ut tale aliquid effundam*) E 1.

ellipsis subiecti ante locos biblicos: sicut ait 255,3. 256,18. 258,6. sicut dixit 244,17. et iterum dicit 247,18. et in Osee dicit 248,3. et iterum dicit per prophetas 247,9. inquit 238,10. 255,20. et iterum inquit 236,24. 237,5. sicut in euangelio inquit 241,23. quia, inquit 237,20(?). *nonnumquam subiectum quale est ds, dns, sps, e contextu subintellegi potest.*

obiectum uel structura praepositionalis e nomine pendet: in testimonium omnibus gentibus C 34.40. usque in finem uitae meae xpo dno meo C 44. cf 58. spiritus in me (τὸ ἐν ἐμοὶ πνεῦμα) C 16. proselito et peregrino propter nomen suum C 26. cf 59. E 1. oues tuae circa me (τὰ πρόβατά σου τὰ περὶ ἐμέ) E 12. traditor xpianorum in manus Scottorum E 12. *sic accipimus* debueram metuere hanc sententiam in illa die (τὴν τότε δίκην) C 8. scriptum ... sine honore C 29.

obiectum duplex e uerbo admonendi pendet: ut me ... responsum diuinum ... admonere C 35. (sacerdotes) <nos> nostram salutem ad-monebant C 1 *conieci*.

formatio adiectiuorum (exempla notabiliora): †letalis E 13. mortalis E 9. occidentalis C 23. temporalis E 19. — detestabilis C 13. †indubitabilis C 34. †ineffabilis E 10.17. inenarrabilis C 4.25. innumerabilis C 23. laudabilis D 3 a. mirabilia C 3.45. — contemptibilis C 1. impossibilis C 19. inextinguibilis E 8. uisibilia et inuisibilia C 4. — †gaudibundus C 24. — honorificus C 5. †mirificus C 34. ueneficus *subst* E 18. — fraudulentus E 19. sanguilentus E 2. — ultroneus C 49 (Ex 25,2). — copiosus C 40. laboriosus C 26. otiosus C 7. religiosus C 49. speciosus (-issimi) E 16. — †dominicus C 13. — †genetius C 42. — credulus E 17 (Gen 39,19). cf incredulus C 37.49. †gerulus *subst* E 21. — †inuerbis C 10 (*u commentarium*).

formae adiectiuorum et aduerbiorum: miserissime (miserrime G'v) C 59. sublimam (-em G'. om v) E 6. cum tardiori lingua C 11. (*sed recte distinguitur inter in praesenti saeculo C 55 et praesente ... Corotico E 21.*)

adiectiuum cum ui aduerbiali: frequens (-nt G') in die orabam C 16. ut me ... creber (-rime vΔ₂) admonere C 35. — *dubium:* ego primus rusticus C 12.

enallage adiectiui: indefessam gratiam ago C 34. ut indubitabilem eum .. crederem C 34. cf mihi ultronea (ultro P) munuscula donabant C 49. uerissime credatur C 62.

formatio aduerbiorum u aduerbia minus usitata (in capite huius indicis).

aduerbiorum usus notabilis: aliquando *de tempore praeterito* C 15.28. E 10. — ante C 4.10 (237,25). 32.46. E 21. *abundat* C 10 (237,26). 34.52. E 11. *nusquam legitur* antea. — contra C 28 ('on the contrary'). — denique in *consummatione argumenti* C 13. E 10. — forsitan C 33. forte C 11.17. E 11.16. (*cum coniunctiuo*) C 50. *nusquam* fortasse. — itaque *non legitur primo loco*. unde autem ammiramini itaque C 13. — magis ('on the contrary') C 50 *ex*. — male *ut in lingua uulgari usurpatur* C 26. 60. — sic *proleptice* 242,21. 243,6.12. 244,16. 257,8. — sponte C 28.32.

(non sponte patrum earum) 42. — *aduerbia frequenter usurpata*: postmodum C 32.36.38.53. (deinde postmodum C 17.) ubique C 14.19.38. 40.50.51.55. usque (ad, dum, in, nunc, ubi) 21^{ies}.

comparatio: 1. *comparatiuus pro positiuo*: sicut superius insinuauī C 22. — 2. *superlatiuus pro comparatiuo*: non minimum quam (eras G') pretium quindecim hominum C 53. cf ego primus rusticus C 12. — 3. *positiuius et superlatiuius iuxta ponuntur*: incunctanter et libentissime C 37. diligenter et libentissime C 51.

pronomen personale et reflexium: ego *emphatice* 235,2 (cf F 2). 238,15. 240,23. 241,9. 245,16.23. 249,27 (et ego ipse). 250,14. *similiter, ut uid*, 244,10.28. 247,17. 250,5. 254,18. — *in oppositis*: 248,29. 249,13. 250,25. 251,10.23. — *praefigitur uerbo* 18^{ies}, *postponitur semel* (qualiter sum ego . . . instructus atque eruditus C 9). — *datiuius mihi ante uerbum* 27^{ies} *legitur (semel in Φ tantum*: ut mihi dicerent C 18), *post uerbum* 18^{ies}; *accusatiuus* 29^{ies} *ante uerbum (in ultimo membro tantum ut coram cunctis, bonis et malis, et me publice dehonestaret C 32),* 24^{ies} *post uerbum*. — *egomet*: memet ipsum (-o F) non credo C 44. — *nos emphatice* quanto nos adpetere debemus C 11. nos autem qui credimus C 60. cf quia nos a fame periclitamur C 19. *casus obliqui ante uerbum leguntur sexies, post uerbum* 14^{ies}; *cum accusatiuo alterius nominis datiuius uel ablatiuius pronominis legitur priore loco post uerbum, accusatiuius posteriore, praeter* E 3 (254,19). *De se loquens Patricius utitur numero plurali* C 11 (nos adpetere debemus).33 (donum di quod largitus est nobis). cf noster. — *tu emphatice*: nequaquam tu nobiscum adpetes ire C 18. tu dicis, ds tuus magnus . . . est C 19. dandus es tu ad gradum episcopatus C 32. tu potius interficis et uendis illos E 14. *casus obliqui ante uerbum leguntur quinquies, post uerbum septies*. — *uos emphatice*: C 13. 20.40 (non plebs mea uos, ubi deest copula).47.48.53. E 18. *casus obliqui ante uerbum quinquies, post uerbum* 14^{ies}. — *se ante uerbum legitur* C 29.46. E 18.19. (ubi nemo se poterit [poterit se Φ] subtrahere C 8); *post uerbum*: qui replent se E 8. amantibus se (cf Iac 1,12. al) C 57. inter se ipsos C 46.

pronomen possessium: meus *saepissime exprimitur; postponitur exceptis his locis*: non mea gratia 246,15. 256,21. mea ignorantia 253,13. cum mea inscientia 238,8. de mea quoque opera 244,19. in mea absentia 245,1. non mea uerba 259,2. — *noster* 16^{ies} *legitur (semel in Φ tantum*: 238,12); *semper postponitur praeter* 235,11 et 243,14 (PΔ). *ad Patricium solum spectat paruitatis nostrae* E 9. — *tuus semper postponitur (octo loci numerantur)*. — *uester* 13^{ies} *exstat, semper postponitur; lectio uariat* C 11 (nostra Φ); C 54 (ab aliquo uestro: uestrum φ).

pronomen possessium cum comparatiuo uel superlatiui coniungitur: ab

aliquantis senioribus meis C 26. cf 37: insinuavi amicissimo meo C 27. cf 32.

pronomen reflexium indirectum uel perperam usurpatum: qui reddet unicuique secundum facta sua C 4. ut donaret mihi bibere calicem eius sicut indulsit et ceteris amantibus se C 57. non contingat mihi a do meo ut numquam amittam plebem suam C 58. qui uictimat filium in conspectu patris sui (*om v*) E 8 (*c* Eccli. 34, 24). testificor coram do et angelis suis E 20 (*u app bibl*; eius C 61). dns pepercit proselito et peregrino propter nomen suum C 26. cf 59.

eius, illius, sim, loco pronominis reflexiui: qui sermones illorum ex infantia numquam mutarunt C 9. (uirgines di hoc faciunt) non sponte patrum earum C 42. ut donaret mihi bibere calicem eius C 57.

pronomina demonstratiua et determinatiua: legitur hic 46^{ies}, iste quater, is 44^{ies}, ille 86^{ies}, ipse 40^{ies}. **hic** postponitur E 21 (gerulus litterarum harum). *u congruentia*. — **iste:** uocant te homines isti C 18. iste quare se mittit in periculo? C 46. (= ille) C 60. ista = haec E 2. — **is** abundat, ut saepe in sacris scripturis: qui ibi nati sunt nescimus numerum eorum C 42. mendacibus periuris pars eorum in stagnum ignis aeterni E 18. *formae unius syllabae hae tantum leguntur:* id est C 44. id quod E 1. non id solum sed etiam C 43. *genitiuus possessiuus et obiectum semper postponuntur praeter* C 34 ut indubitabilem eum sine fine crederem. — **ille** adiectiuum postponitur decies; antecedit septies uocem dies (*sed* in die illa C 8. in diebus illis C 40. ad noctem illam C 29), praeterea cum illis proselititis et captiuis C 59. *obiectum 41 locis post uerbum, sex locis ante uerbum ponitur*. — **ipse, i e ds:** C 5. 55. 57. E 18. cf C 24. *sim* ipsius C 4. 16. 39. 44 (*bis*). 48. 59. 60. (61 P.) E 6 (eius *v*). ipsum C 25. C 4. ex ipso et per ipsum et in ipso C 59. *<ipso>* iubente C 60. *praeterea notandum:* ut esset uirgo xpi et ipsa do proximaret C 42. gehennam pariter cum ipso (*i e* diabolo) mancipabunt E 4. *pro determinatiuo:* putabam audire uocem ipsorum C 23. dabam mercedem filiis ipsorum C 52. ob mala opera ipsorum E 3. non licet .. cibum .. sumere cum ipsis nec elemosinas ipsorum recipi debeat E 7.

pronomina inter se confunduntur: hic = is: huius (eius D) filium C 4. dedit mihi unam ex his (illis [Φ]) C 23. — iste = hic, ille C 60. E 2. — ille = is *fere sexagies discrepantibus hic illic codicibus*. — is = ille: ea nocte prima mansi cum illis C 21. cf 22. — ipse = idem: ipso momento C 23 (*u app crit*).

ellipsis pronominis demonstratiui ante relatiuum: uae qui replent se *<his v>* quae non sunt sua E 8. ut me ... dehonestaret quod ante ... indulserat C 32.

pronomen demonstratiuum uel determinatiuum abundat: cur hoc meruimus audire tale responsum C 32. illud quod . . . ita hoc faciunt C 42. omnia quaecumque nobiscum inuenerunt rapuerunt illud (illa G'. *om* V). C 52. — *cum uariatione casus*: gentes illas inter quas habito, ego fidem illis praestauim C 48. mendacibus periuris pars eorum in stagnum ignis aeterni E 18.

pronomine demonstratiuo uel determinatiuo casus indicatur post nominatiuum pendente uel nominatiuus pendens.

pronomen interrogatiuum: quod (quid Φ) oremus . . . nescimus C 25 (*u app bibl*). — (qualis = qui:) qualem spem habes in dm? E 14.

pronomen relatiuum: 1. *emphasis subiecti*: non uos estis qui loquimini sed sps patris uestri qui loquitur in uobis C 20. qui dedit animam suam pro te ipse est qui loquitur in te C 24. cogitabam quis esset qui in me orabat C 25. non mea gratia sed ds qui uincit in me C 37. cf E 11. — 2. qui = quicumque: rideat . . . qui uoluerit C 45. fac nobiscum amicitiam quo modo (quomodo ω . V₂) uolueris C 18. — 3. *aduerbium relatiuum* qua: de periculis duodecim qua (quibus ϕ) periclitata est anima mea C 35.

accusatiuus neutrius pronominis relatiui neglecta constructione ponitur: quod (quia PA. *om* V) obstiterunt (enim V) peccata mea C 10. fortiter temptauit me satanas, quod (cuius G') memor ero C 20. dandus es tu ad gradum episcopatus, quod (quo v) non eram dignus C 32. — ut me publice dehonestaret quod ante . . . indulerat C 32 (*potius per ellipsim explicandum*). — *idem fere atque id quod*: ut . . . tantam gratiam mihi donaret; quod . . . ego numquam speraui C 15. de mea . . . opera (meo . . . opere G'v) quod a xpō . . . didiceram C 30. — ante defensionem illam (quod ego non interfui) C 32.

pronominis indefiniti usus insolentior: si aliquid boni umquam imitatus sum C 59. si aliquid pusillum egi C 62. ubi numquam aliquis peruenerat C 51. ut non uideam aliquem de cognatione mea E 10. numquam habui aliquam (ullam v) occasionem C 61. ut nemo umquam dicat C 62. ut nequaquam subtrahatur . . . a nemine E 21. ut (non) me in aliquo titulo infideli caperent C 49. — *alius = quidam*: alio die C 19. (alia nocte C 24?) — *aliquanti = aliqui* C 11. 26. 32. 37. — *occasio cuiuslibet* C 55. — *u genitiuus; accusatiuus et ablatiuus pronominis*.

numerale: unus: *insistitur in numero singulari*: in die una C 16. una die, immo in una hora C 27. de loco non in uno quoque C 46. *opposita*: adoramus unum dm in trinitate sacri nominis C 4. unum membrum . . . omnia membra E 15. unus — alter E 11. (= unus idemque) quasi ex uno ore C 23. *sim* E 11. 16(ter). *idem fere quod articulus indefinitus*

linguarum modernarum: una benedicta Scotta C 42. una causa ('for some reason') C 42. — **milia**: ducenta milia passus C 17. tot milia hominum C 14.50. cum tot milia C 1. E 14. in milia milium C 46.

ellipsis copulae u uerbum infinitum.

formatio uerborum: honorifico C 19. magnifico C 5.34. testificor C 61. E 20. — haesito C 9. *frequentatiui proprie dicti aliud exemplum apud Patricium non exstat.* — *praeterea notamus* balbutio (VL) C 11. †infamo C 49. pulso C 32. sanguino E 2.

uerborum formae minus usitatae: audiissem C 18. audierit C 34. custodierit C 43. deglutierunt E 12. — mutarunt (motarunt D. mutauerunt VΔ) C 9. — 3. *persona perf ind in -ere non exstat.* — reuersus sum C 18. expertus sum (expergiscor) C 23.24.25. (*u app crit*) — praestauī (praestiti V) C 48. — *part perf c* fui, fueram, *sim*: locuti fuerint C 7. datum fuisset C 11. confessus fueram C 27. effatus fuisset C 33. baptizatus fuerit C 40. ostensum fuerat C 46. dignatus fuerit C 62.

genera uerbi: ammirabam (admirabar φ) C 25 (stupebam et -am et cogitabam). exhortarent (-tur Gv) C 40 (baptizarent et -arent). — rememorarem C 2. hospitabam C 18. ut . . . auderem adgrederē C 34 (*u app crit*). piscare C 40 (-ri G'v). iocundare E 13. fruerē E 13. (frui G'. *u app crit* [Pv]); *sed* frui C 53. uociferabo (-or G) E 16. (orire [P: -ri *cell*] C 20.) — depraedari *cum notione passiuā* E 12 (laniantur atque -antur). — conuerterem (PV.Ψ: conuerterer Δ. confirmarem D) C 2 (*u commentarium*). conuersus sum in fugam C 17. — meruimus C 32. mereantur E 21.

uerba praeter morem transitiua uel intransitiua: a xpo dno meo subuentus sum C 20 (*sed non sum dignus do neque hominibus -ire* E 16). ut uel sero paeniteant quod . . . gesserunt E 19 (*sed non me -et* C 53. E 10). — forte habebat ducenta milia passus C 17 ('*il y avait*'). ubique habundat illi C 19. *fortasse similiter accipiendum*: et si forte uidetur apud aliquantos me in hoc praeponere ('*and if it seems to some that I . . .*') C 11.

de uerborum notione et usu: 1. *synonyma*: ambulare C 23.52. ire C 18. 40 (*bis euntes*). 17 (*iturus*). pergere C 28.43.51. uenire C 17.18. — posse C 6.8.9. ualere C 35. cf 57. — nequeo *ter* (*bis enumerare nequeo* E 12. 16), non possum *sexies* (*uariant codd ad 238, 4*). — 2. *circumlocutiones*: capturam dedi C 1.10.21. — fac nobiscum amicitiam C 18. cachinnos fecerunt E 3. nec iniuriam legentibus faciam C 35. — partem habeo E 6 (cf Luc 11,36. *al*). habebam tunc annos quindecim C 27. habere curam C 28. honorem E 11. notitiam di C 41. occasionem C 61. spem

E 14. — 3. *uenire abundat*: uenite (uenient) et ... C 38.39.40. E 18. (unde ab omni mundo uenturi sunt credentes C 39). uenit qui potens est et ... sustulit me C 12. — 4. *uolo expectare* C 39. *alibi semper futurum exactum*: uoluero C 43.55. -is C 18. -it C 43.45.

tempora uerbi: 1. *praesens*: decorione patre nascor E 10. non silebo neque abscondo C 45. — 2. *futurum cum notione prohibitiua*: nequaquam tu nobiscum adpetes (-is P. -as VΔ) ire C 18. non concupisces rem proximi tui. non occides E 9. — 3. *coepi cum infinitiuo pro perfecto simplici* C 18.19. E 17. — 4. *plusquamperfectum sequitur coniunctionem* postquam: C 16. — *debueram c notione imperfecti* C 12.44.46 (249,17, ubi -uero δ). — 5. *futurum exactum pro futuro simplici*: 237,26. 239,4. 241,15. 245,19.20. 246,19. 247,19 (bis).20. 248,27. 249,4. 252,5. 253,1.11. 259,4 (bis).7. (*formae uerbi q e uelle*:) C 18.43 (bis).45.55.

consecutio temporum negligitur: sic effitiatus est ut sit sps C 25. qui me fidelem seruauit ..., ita ut .. offeram C 34. qui me seruauit, ut et dicam C 34. posui te lumen in gentibus ut sis (τοῦ εἶναι σε) in salutem C 38. — (*cum uariatione temporum*) ne excitem ... et ne .. blasphemaretur (-metur V) C 48. etsi .. caream ... aut .. diuidatur ... aut .. comederent C 59.

modorum uerbi usus: 1. **indicatiuus**: debueram ('I ought to') quasi absolute ponitur: quid adpetere uel quid uitare debueram C 10. cf uehementer debueram ... metuere hanc sententiam C 8. nunc mihi sapit quod ante debueram C 46 (249,29). — *indicatiuus in apodosi periodi irrealis*: si mihi hoc incurrisset, lucratus sum animam C 59. — 2. **coniunctiuus**: a) *optatiuus*: breuiter dicam C 35. nec iniuriam legentibus faciam C 35. neque ut sit occasio adulationis ..., scripserim uobis ('möchte ich euch geschrieben haben') C 54. breuiter exponam C 61. u negatio. — b) *deliberatiuus*: forte ... sperauerim ... uel dimidio scriptulae C 50. quis sanctorum non horreat E 13. quid faciam? E 13.16. — c) *irrealis extra constructionem*: opto impendere animam, si dns mihi indulgeret C 37. credatur quod donum di fuisset C 62. — d) *de coniunctiuo uerbi q e debere* (nec elemosinas ipsorum recipi debeat [u app crit] E 7) cf commentarium. — e) *coniunctiones praeter morem cum coniunctiuo coniunguntur*: antequam C 2 (bis).10.18.27.35.62. cf 45. — donec E 7. (*ceteris locis cum indicatiuo*). — dum clamarem (-bam PΔ) C 20. (usque dum satiemini [Φ.W: -amini D] C 19.) — etsi C 59. — priusquam C 12. — f) *coniunctiuus praesentis pro indicatiuo futuri*: regnum temporale quod ... in momento transeat (-it V) E 19. iusti autem epulentur E 19. sunt qui tales formas pro futuro abortiuo habeant. — 3. **imperatiuus** *tertia personae*: scrutator (V: -tur P. -bor δ) C 57.

modus non assimilatur: cogitabam quis esset qui in me orabat (oraret v. oret PA) C 25. ut ... exaltarem nomen tuum ubicumque loco fuero C 34.

modorum uariatio: qui mihi ostendit ... et qui me audierit C 34. si aliquid pusillum egi uel demonstrauerim C 62. arbitramini et uerissime credatur C 62. *u consecutio temporum, indicatiuus.*

uerbum infinitum: A. Infinitiuus: 1. *appositio infinitiui:* non sapiebat illis ..., intellegi ('to wit?') propter rusticitatem meam C 46. — 2. *infinitiuus finalis:* ueneram ... praedicare C 37. ut uenirem esse cum illis (*u app crit*) C 43. uiuo do meo docere gentes E 1. quos praedestinauit euangelium praedicare E 6. — 3. *infinitiuus consecutiuus u contaminatio syntactica* (3); *coniunctiones B* (ut). — 4. *aliae constructiones notabiles:* opto fratribus et cognatis meis (fratres et cognatos meos Δ) scire qualitatem meam C 6. opto impendere C 37. uisitare fratres ... ualde optabam C 43 (*sed membra periodi illius minime inter se congruunt*). — cogitauit scribere C 9. pertimeo denudare C 10. timeo perdere laborem C 43. horreat iocundare E 13. — uidi ... solem oriri C 20. nec ... locum darem infamare siue detractare C 49. — faciam uos fieri (*om P5*) pisca-tores hominum (*C 40 (u app bibl)*; *sed* facit ut sint C 4. — donum tam magnum ... dm agnoscere uel diligere C 36. — oportet *cum infinitiuo coniungitur:* C 14.40(*bis*). (*sed* ut decantetur ... oportet D 3 a.) — 5. *infinitiuus pro acc c inf:* ab illis speraui uenire in fidem ihu xpi C 18 (*u app crit*). (*cum ellipsi accusatiui pronominis reflexiui:*) putabam audire uocem ipsorum C 23. insinuauit nobis responsum accepisse C 42. cotidie spero aut internicionem aut circumueniri aut redigi in seruitutem C 55. — 6. *accusatiuus cum infinitiuo his tantum locis inuenitur:* quem ... fuisse testamur C 4. sps ... futurum reum me esse designat C 43. episcopum me esse fateor E 1. indulget illis ... potestatem quos ligarent ... ligatos esse E 6. — *participium coniunctum pro acc c inf positum esse uidetur:* expectamus aduentum ipsius mox futurum C 4. quos .. dns .. praedixerat praenuntiatiuros euangelium C 34 (*u app crit*). uideo ... me supra modum exaltatum C 55.

B. Gerundiuum: dandus es tu ad gradum episcopatus C 32. scripsi ... uerba ista danda et tradenda militibus mittenda Corotici E 2. non solum facientes mala ... damnandi sunt E 14. (debeo *c inf* C 11.33. 34.) — caro trahit ... ad inlecebras inlicitate perficiendas C 44. quod praedixi .. ad roborandam et confirmandam fidem uestram C 47. mittunt uiros ... ad redimendos captiuos E 14. exclamare ad retribuendum quoque aliquid dno C 12 *ex more scriptoris pro gerundiuo accipere malim quam pro gerundio. certum gerundii exemplum non exstat.*

C. Participium: 1. *post uerba percipiendi:* audiui uocem dicentem mihi C 17. cf responsum dicentem C 17.21.29. audiebam quosdam

spiritus psallentes in me F 1. uidi ... uirum uenientem C 23. uidi in me ipsum orantem C 25. (*sed* uidi ... solem oriri C 20.) — 2. *ellipsis copulae post participium*: dum crudeliter trucidati atque mactati E 3. nescio quid magis lugeam an qui interfecti uel quos ceperunt E 4. *u accusatiuus cum infinitiuo* (*infinitiuus sub 6*); *parataxis*. — 3. *participium praesentis uel futuri cum copula pro uerbo simplici*: sacerdotibus nostris non oboedientes fuimus C 1 (inobedientes Φ). eadem nocte eram dormiens C 20. reddituri sumus rationem C 8. ab omni mundo uenturi sunt credentes C 39. *u contaminatio syntactica*.

praepositionum usus insolentior: **a** (*om* VRG') fame periclitamur C 19. castigatus sum et ... humiliatus sum a fame et nuditate C 27. ab illis speraui uenire in fidem xpi C 18; cf 50. *cum uerbis patiendi* C 37.42. — **ad** *cum accusatiuo ad notionem datiui accedit*: genti ad quam caritas xpi transtulit et donauit me C 13. ut clerici ... illis ordinarentur ad plebem nuper uenientem ad credulitatem C 38. ad gentes illas inter quas habito, ego fidem illis praestauit C 48. uenenum letale cibum porrigunt ad amicos et filios suos E 13. *praetera notandum* ad Patrem receptum C 4 (*u app crit*). ad perfectum semper addiderunt C 9. — me **aduersus** C 27. — **apud**: spiritaliter apud Patrem ... genitum C 4. contemptibilissimus apud plurimos C 1. uidetur apud aliquantos me in hoc praeponere C 11. — **cum**: misi epistolam cum sco presbytero ... cum clericis E 3. quaecumque nobiscum inuenerunt C 52. decantetur uobiscum ... uox illa D 3 a. obtinui cum illis C 18. cum quo C 17. cum tot milia C 1.14 (milibus G'. Ψ: C 1. v: E 14). — **de**: uenientem quasi de Hiberione C 23. — sanguinare de sanguine E 2. de spoliis ... repleuerunt domos suas. de rapinis uiuunt E 13. — aliquantis de senioribus meis C 37. unus de C 56. E 11. aliquem de cognatione mea E 10. ut nobis aliquid indulgerent de praeda uel de captiuis baptizatis E 3. quemquam de hominibus C 17. de cibo uero nihil habuimus C 22. de genere nostro qui ibi nati sunt C 42. de loco non in uno C 46. effundam de spiritu meo C 40 (*bis*). (in uisu de nocte [Δ: nocte Pv. noctis D] C 23.) — **ex** (*sic semper etiam ante consonantes*): *cum notione partitiua*: ex illis maxime laborant quae seruitio detinentur C 42. super altare iactabant ex ornamentis suis C 49. qui offert sacrificium ex substantia pauperum E 8. unus, multi ex saepe. — **in** *c^{acc}*: misertus est mihi dns in milia milium C 46. *c^{abl} 1. loci*: uidit in me quod paratus eram C 46. neophyti in ueste candida E 3. 2. *temporis*: una die ... immo in una hora C 27. *ante abl sing die praepositio in legitur decies, non legitur nouies* ((in vΔ) illo die C 26); *abl plur (in locis biblicis) cum in quater, sine in semel*. 3. *modi*: (pergebam) in multis periculis C 51. euangelium praedicare in persecutionibus non paruis E 6. 4. *instru-*

menti: qualiter sum ego in sermonibus instructus C 9. qui me in omnibus confortauit C 30. ut me in omnibus ... conseruarem C 49 (250,1). ut <non> me in aliquo titulo infideli caperent C 49 (250,16). nec in minimo incredulis locum darem infamare C 49 (250,17). in multis imperfectus sum C 6. etsi imperitus sum in omnibus C 49 (250,10). me in hoc praepone C 11. potentes in sermone et in omni re C 13. manus suas coinquinauit in sanguine E 9. cf ueni in uirtute di C 17. — **ob** hoc C 18. quam ob rem E 12. *praetera quater in Epist.* — **per** totam legem carpere testimonia E 9. etsi ... cadauer per singula membra diuidatur C 59. — **post**: exclamabat post me C 18. uenite post me C 40. pos (post VF) tergum C 46. post haec C 4 (hunc Φ). 19 (hoc ΦΥ). — **prae semel tantum**: prae ceteris C 13. — **praeter** 'except', 'in addition to': C 35.42. cf 52. — **pro** (G': per φ) his 'because of this' C 46. pro dilectione proximorum E 1. reddent pro (de DR) eo rationem C 7. — **secus** uiam C 19. — **sub**: honorificatus sum sub oculis eorum C 19. — **usque** ad de mensura uel limite C 16.37.42. E 1.

praepositiones suppressae: peruenimus <ad Δ₂> homines C 22 (bis). qui fuit <in Δ₂> uico †bannauem taburnia† C 1. — *u ablatius, indeclinabilia* (Hiberione).

coniunctiones: A) **in clausulis primariis**: **atque, ac** *ter* legitur in *Conf*, *undecies* in *Epist*, *semel* in *Dictis*. *Semper fere coniunguntur membra aequalia accedente plerumque homoioteleuto*: atque C 4.9. E 1.2 (*ter*). 3.5. 12(bis).16. D 1. *tria membra iunguntur per et* — atque E 16.18. *ac semel*: magis ac magis (magisque V) C 16. — **aut**: ut ego curam haberem aut satagerem C 28. *iuncturae*: aut — aut — aut — siue C 55. uel — aut E 14. (aut — uel — aut P *pro* an — uel — uel v8 E 4.) — **autem** *significatione propria euanescente* (cf δέ): C 35.44.45.53.54. E 8 (*om* ∇Δ₂). *iuncturae*: dummodo autem C 13. forte autem C 50. quando autem C 28. unde autem C 3.8.13.31.40.41.43.46.57. — **et** *coniunctio copulatiua a Patricio frequentissime adhibita: legitur enim et fere 400^{ies}, atque (ac) 15^{ies}, -que 5^{ies}. 1. coniunctio proprie copulatiua: a) coniunguntur saepissime duo membra aequalia, accedente nonnumquam allitteratione, assonantia, homoioteleuto; membra sic coniuncta haud raro sunt fere synonyma, exempla non dabimus.* — b) *coniunguntur duo membra inaequalia*: in siluis et monte C 16. sponte et laetus indulserat C 32. idola et (*om* V) inmunda C 41. cum humilitate et ueraciter C 13. praeter insidias multas et quae uerbis exprimere non ualeo C 35. incunctanter et libentissime C 37. diligenter et libentissime C 51. hic et in aeternum C 12.26. E 21. hic et in futurum C 31. praedixi et praedico C 47. praestauit et praestabo C 48. subuentus sum et sps ... clamabat C 20. ostendit ... et ... audierit C 34. secundum quod mihi ostensum fuerat

et sicut sps suggerebat C 46. cupio et paratus eram C 57. arbitramini et uerissime credatur C 62. cogor zelo di et ueritas xpi excitauit E 1. etsi uoluerō amittere illas et ut pergens ... C 43. uisitare fratres et ut uiderem C 43. cecidit super me ueluti saxum ingens et nihil membrorum meorum praeualens C 20. sicut falsa comparauerunt patres nostri idola et non est in eis utilitas (*idem fere quod*: et inutilia) C 38. responsum accepisse a nuntio di et monuit eam ut ... C 42. alligatus spu ... et timeo perdere laborem C 43. quos elegit et indulsit illis ... potestatem E 6. — (*climax*:) satis et nimis cupio C 57. adhuc impendo et superimpendam C 53. — c) *cum notione oppositionis*: persecutionem patiuntur ... et nihilominus plus augetur numerus C 42. qui adiutor datus sum et non cito adquireui C 46. super altare iactabant ex ornamentis suis et iterum reddebam illis C 49. ut totum mundum lucretur et animae suae detrimentum patiatur E 8. — d) *introducitur parenthesis uel epexegetis*: ut in die una usque ad centum orationes et in nocte prope similiter C 16. qui uenerunt, et peccata mea, contra ... episcopatum meum C 26. humiliatus sum a fame et nuditate, et cotidie C 27. quod ante ... indulserat, et dns qui maior omnibus est C 32. promptus sum ut etiam animam meam *ponam* pro nomine eius et ibi opto impendere eam C 37. ut pergens in Brittanniis — et libentissime paratus eram C 43. timeo perdere laborem quem inchoaui, et non ego sed xps C 43. qui saepe indulsit insipientiae meae negligentiae meae et de loco non in uno quoque ut non mihi ... irasceretur C 46. ne excitem illis et nobis omnibus persecutionem C 48. inter uos et ubique pergebam causa uestra C 51(?). ita ut me fruamini et ego uobis semper fruar in dm C 53. oues tuae lanianture atque depraedantur, et supradictis latrunculis E 12. epistola xpi, et si non deserta ... C 11. — e) *coordinatio pro subordinatione (praeter locos biblicos C 5.38.40[ter]. 50[bis]. 55)*: audiui unum ex illis et fortiter exclamabat post me C 18 (*u app. crit.*). eadem .. nocte eram dormiens et fortiter temptauit me satanas C 20. putabam audire uocem ipsorum ... et sic exclamauerunt C 23. et audiui super me ... et ibi fortiter orabat gemitibus C 25. — f) *ab et iterum incipiunt enuntiata 242,3.12. 243,8. (locus biblicus praecedenti adiungitur)*: C 25.38.40. E 15. (et iterum inquit) C 5.7. (et iterum dicit) C 40 (*bis*). (et iterum sps testatur) C 11. cf et item C 40. et idem C 7. et E 18. — g) *tria membra coniunguntur (praeter locos biblicos)*: C 1.13.22.49.60. E 21. — *per et ... et ... et ... membra plurima ita coniunguntur ut λέξις εἰρομένη efficiatur*: C 1—2.4.12.16—19.20.23.24.25.40.52. — *inconcinnitas quaedam subrepsit his locis*: tradidi patriam et parentes et animam meam E 1. cum metu et reuerentia et sine querella C 13. ueneram ... praedicare et ... contumelias perferre ... et ut darem ... C 37. filii di uiui et coheredes xpi et con-

formes futuri imaginis ipsius C 59. sapiens per linguam dinoscetur et sensus et scientia et doctrina ueritatis C 9. *tria membra coniunguntur per* et — atque: cum apostolis et prophetis atque martyribus E 18. di et apostolorum atque prophetarum E 20. — et *non nisi tertio loco ponitur*: iusti ... epulentur ... cum xpo <et v> iudicabunt nationes et regibus iniquis dominabuntur E 19. cf C 4 (236,16) *codd* PV. *tertio loco omittitur*: danda et tradenda, militibus mittenda Corotici E 2 (*sed u adn crit*). — 2. et *idem fere est quod* etiam: a) *uox quasi correlatiua*: olim cogitavi scribere, sed et (*om* Φ) usque nunc haesitavi C 9. sicut et ceteri C 9.11.44.57. sicut et ego ipse testor C 46. ut et uos imitemini maiora C 47. sed et xps dns pauper fuit pro nobis C 55. quomodo et xps manet in aeternum C 60. ligatos esse et in caelis E 6. — ut et (*ei v*) dicam C 34. — b) *nouum aliquid superadditur*: et rusticationem ab Altissimo creatam C 11 (*u commentarium*). ut et ille in mea absentia pulsaret pro me C 32. ut coram cunctis, bonis et malis, et me publice dehonestaret C 32. ut et ego inscius ... hoc opus ... auderem adgredere C 34. non sponte patrum earum, sed et persecutionem patiuntur C 42. sed et omnes qui adorant *solem* in poenam .. deuenient C 60. — 3. *significationes minus usitatae*: et comperi ab aliquantis fratribus ... ut ... pulsaret pro me C 32 ('*and this although I ascertained ...*'). et contigit scelus ... , de saeculo recessistis ad paradisum E 17 ('*and if such a crime did take place*'). — **etiam**: *iuncturae*: non solum — sed etiam E 14. nec non — sed etiam C 34. non id solum sed etiam *formula transitionis* C 43. — et si — sed etiam C 11. (= et:) per Gallias atque Italiam, etiam in insolis D 1. *ad notionem concessiuam accedit*: ut etiam in siluis et monte manebam C 16. — **igitur** primo loco C 29 (*alibi non legitur*). — **quapropter** (*semper in capite enuntiati*) C 9.58. E 5.15. — **quasi** *idem fere ac* quippe (ἅτε): C 43.45.59. — **-que** C 34 (itaque = et ita). 61 (iterum iterumque). E 8 (ideoque). *abundat* E 2. *tertio loco tantum* E 15 (*u app crit*). — **sed** *saepissime post negationem uel clausulam cui aliqua notio negatiua inest. iuncturae*: sed tamen C 33. sed uerumtamen C 18, cf 11. *cum notione restrictiua*: et si forte uidetur me in hoc praeponere ... , sed scriptum est C 11. epistola ... et si non deserta sed ... scripta in cordibus uestris C 11. qui nescio in posterum prouidere, sed illud scio certissime C 12. donum tam magnum ... dm agnoscere ... , sed (*i e* ea tamen conditione) ut patriam ... amitterem C 36. ualde optabam, sed alligatus spu ('*were it not that*') 248,27. — *introducitur interrogatio rhetorica*: sed quid prodest excusatio? ... sed quis me credit? C 10. *sim* C 20. 32.57. *uis aduersatiua euanuit* (δὲ): 239,14. 248,20. 251,19. 253,10. — **sicut** *in epexegesi*: 237,18. 239,20. 242,9. 247,6. 249,26. 257,7. sicut enim sps gestit C 10. *in exclamatione* (ὥς): sicut (quam, quomodo VL, uere VULG) falsa comparauerunt patres nostri idola C 38. — **tamen**

non legitur nisi in iuncturis: tamen etsi C 6. etsi — tamen C 42.49. sed tamen C 33. (ideo tamen C 35 *uix sanum.*) — *uel restrictiue* C 2. (E 21. cf C 23.) C 50 (*bis*). *copulatiue* haud raro in *enuntiatis interrogatiuis*, *negatiuis*, *condicionalibus*; *notandum*: non gratis laboraui uel peregrinatio mea in uacuum non fuit E 17. unde mihi donum tam magnum ... *dm* agnoscere uel diligere? C 36. post correptionem uel agnitionem di C 3. *locus biblicus praecedenti adiungitur* E 8.9. — **uero** *ui aduersatiua euanescere* (δὲ) 241,14. — **ut** *u sub clausulis secundariis*.

B) **in clausulis secundariis**: **cum** (dum D. tunc P) recitabam ... putabam ... audire C 23. cum haec audiissem separaui me ab illis C 18. — **dum** ('*as*'): dum scio certissime C 55. ('*whilst*'): dum clamarem C 20. usque dum satiamini (-emini Φ.W) C 19. (*cum participio sine copula*) E 3. — **etsi** *c ind praes* C 6.42.49. E 1.6. *c coni praes* C 59. *c ind fut exact primae pers sing* C 10.43.55. — **nisi** (*praecedente semper uoce negatiua*): non potui intellegere nisi ... sic effitiatus est C 24. qui numquam notitiam di habuerunt nisi idola ... coluerunt C 41. nihil ualeo nisi ipse mihi dederit C 57. — **quando** *c notione aduersatiua*: quando autem tunc etiam de me ipso non cogitabam C 28. — **quatenus** modo ipse adpeto C 10. — **quia** *in enuntiatis quae primariorum fere instar sunt*: 236,5.8. 240,11.13.16.22. 241,2.3.7. 244,2. 245,8. 246,23. 249,4. 251,24.27. 252,4. (237,24 [PΔ]. 251,27 *posteriore loco* [VFC].) *introducitur locus biblicus* C 47.48. (quia utique) E 4. *u clausulas declaratiuas*. — **quod** *in exclamatione clausulae primariae instar*: quod in labe et in obprobrium non male deueni! C 26. *sic fortasse* quod si ds inspirat illos ... E 21. *in clausulis secundariis semper c notione praedicationis, u clausulas declaratiuas*. non quod optabam *in capite enuntiati* E 1. — **si** *coniunctio quasi interrogatiua*: si talis essem C 13. si habebam tunc annos quindecim C 27. testis est ille si ita est E 1. — **ut**: 1. *c ui comparatiua*: non ut causa malitiae C 46. offeram illi sacrificium ut hostiam uiuentem animam meam C 34. spiritus agebatur ut ('*to wit*') in die una usque ad centum orationes C 16. (*c ui explicatiua uel causali*;) ut ... debeo suscipere C 34. ut ego ueneram C 37. ut futurum reum me esse designat C 43. neque ut honorem spero C 54. (*c ui concessiua*;) ut etiam ... manebam C 16. 2. *c ui optatiua*: utinam ut ... imitemini C 47. ut nusquam C 23. ut non C 26. ut nemo C 62. 3. *c ui consecutiua* 43^{ies} (ita ut *septies*). *coni praes sequitur perf uerbi principalis* C 34(*bis*).53. E 10. custodierit ... ut non peccem C 43. promptus fuerit ut sit E 21. 4. *incertum an cum infinitiuo coniungatur his locis*: ut exaltare et confiteri (-mus et -emur Φ) C 3. ut ... relinquere (-em G') C 14. ut me ... admonere (-eret F. -uit Δ₂) C 35. 5. *pro acc c inf uel quod*: locutus sum ut haberem C 18. effitiatus est ut sit sps C 25. comperi ... ut et ille ... pulsaret C 32. (speraui ... ut mihi

dicerent Φ : C 18 [240,16].) — gratias ago *do* ut non me impediret C 30. — *praeterea*: quid prodest homini ut (si v c VL.VULG) *E* 8. obstiterunt peccata mea ut confirmarem C 10.

particulae: **immo** C 10.27. D 3. — **quidem** (*semper emphatice*) C 3.12 (et qu. scilicet).13.40 (*bis*). — **quoque** *semper uidetur abundare*: et de mea quoque opera C 30. et de loco non in uno quoque C 46. ad retribuendum quoque aliquid dno C 12. — **scilicet** (*semper encliticum*) C 4.12 (indoctus scilicet, = 62. E 1).17 (ibi scilicet = 23). et quidem scilicet C 12. — **utique** C 26. qui utique C 39. E 12.19. quod utique E 19. quia (quod) utique C 12. E 13. E 4 (*sequitur locus biblicus*).

negatio: **ne** *ter tantum*: C 9 (timui ne). 48 (*bis, cum notione finali*); *alibi legitur*: non contingat mihi a *do* meo C 58. iniuria iustorum non te placeat E 12. — ut nemo umquam dicat C 62. ut nequaquam subtrahatur ... a nemine E 21. ut non illis in peccatum reputetur C 26. ut non uideam aliquem de cognatione mea E 10. nec iniuriam legentibus faciam C 35. ut <non> me in aliquo titulo infideli caperent ... nec etiam locum darem C 49. — ubi numquam aliquis perueniat C 51. numquam habui aliquam occasionem ... ut umquam redirem C 61. rogauerunt me ut ... nusquam (numquam ϕ) ab illis discederem C 23. — **neque, nec** *promiscue usurpantur, nisi quod neque non legitur ante s, nec non legitur ante d t h q*. — 1. *negatio non praecedit*: nec sic praedixit C 29. nec non contra uotum C 37. nec iniuriam legentibus faciam C 35. — 2. *ubi negatio praecedit, comma posterius saepe epexegetis est*: tacere non possum, neque expedit quidem C 3. *sim* C 4.15.27.32.45. 53.55 (*bis*). E 2.6.7.10.11.16.17. — **non**: 1. *negatio singulae uocis*: uocabo non plebem meam plebem meam *etc* C 40. — 2. *clausula tota negatur*: non ut causa malitiae C 46. non quod optabam E 1. — 3. *c futuro in clausula prohibitiua*: non concupisces ... non occides E 9. — 4. et non 239,10. 243,5. 247,1. 249,9.20.27. quia a *do* recessimus et praecepta eius non custodiimus et ... non oboedientes fuimus C 1.

negatio duplicatur: alius *ds* nec umquam fuit nec ante nec erit post haec C 4. nec non in secundis sed etiam in pressuris C 34. non contingat mihi ... ut numquam (umquam P) amitterem plebem suam C 58. nequaquam subtrahatur ... a nemine E 21.

parataxis: confiteor dno meo ..., ex quo cognoui eum ... creuit in me amor di et timor ipsius C 44. tu dicis <quia Ψ pr $V_2\beta$ > *ds* tuus magnus ... est C 19. audenter dico non me reprehendit conscientia mea C 31. (non dico ciuibus meis neque ciuibus scorum Romanorum sed ciuibus daemoniorum E 2.) quaeso plurimum ..., adulari talibus non licet E 7. peto illi det mihi C 59. (*sed oro dm ut det mihi* C 58.) *do* gratias,

exinde nihil gustavi C 19. cf 42. E 17. (*sed* do gratias, quia ... C 23.) indignum est illis Hiberionaci sumus E 16. spero autem hoc debueram C 44. ad noctem illam uidi in uisu noctis scriptum erat contra faciem meam C 29. scit ds, si mihi homo hoc effatus fuisset, forsitan tacuissem C 33. cf 48. (*sed* scit ds quod ego ualde optabam C 43.) nesciunt miseri uenenum ... porrigunt E 13. censeo ... non minimum quam pretium quindecim hominum distribui illis C 53. sicut credimus ab omni mundo uenturi sunt credentes C 39. forte non credunt unum baptismum percepimus E 16. certissime reor a do accepi id quod sum E 1. cf C 59. — et erit in nouissimis diebus, ... effundam de spu meo C 40. non conuenit: Vnus destruit alter aedificat E 11. consuetudo Romanorum ...: mittunt uiros *etc.* E 14. — enumerare nequeo *extra constructionem apponitur* E 12.16. *u appositio.* — ut hoc dns seruulo suo concederet ..., in gentem illam tantam gratiam mihi donaret C 15. quomodo nuper facta est plebs dni ..., filii Scottorum et filiae regularum monachi et uirgines xpi esse uidentur C 41. — et contigit scelus tam horrendum ineffabile, do gratias ..., de saeculo recessistis E 17.

contaminatio syntactica: 1. *coniunctio explicatiua aut aduersatiua constructionem transcendit:* desertis breuitate sermone explicare nequeo, sicut enim spiritus gestit C 10. non mea uerba sed di et apostolorum atque prophetarum, qui numquam enim (*om* V) mentiti sunt E 20. ad retribuendum quoque aliquid dno pro tantis beneficiis eius C 12. ut ... curam haberem ... pro salute aliorum, quando autem tunc etiam de me ipso non cogitabam C 28. et si forte uidetur ... me in hoc praepone ... , sed etiam scriptum est enim C 11 (*sed* cf *adn crit*). qui sumus ... epistola xpi ... et si non deserta, sed ... scripta in cordibus uestris C 11. unde ergo ... qui nescio in posterum prouidere, sed illud scio certissime C 12. pro quo legationem fungor in ignobilitate mea, sed quia personam non accipit C 56. ut me pauperculum pupillum ideo tamen (*'darum doch'*?) responsum diuinum ... admonere C 35. ea nocte qua peruenimus homines de cibo uero nihil habuimus C 22. — 2. *clausula secundaria continuatur tamquam primaria:* quem ... fuisse ... testamur ... et per ipsum facta sunt C 4. quem credimus et expectamus aduentum ipsius C 4. qui ex hoc emendatus sum a dno et aptauit me C 28. gratias ago ei qui me ... confortauit ut non me impediret ..., sed magis ex eo sensi in me uirtutem C 30. insinuauit nobis responsum accepisse a nuntio di et monuit eam ut *etc.* C 42. quae ... super altare iactabant ex ornamentis suis et iterum reddebam illis C 49. qui numquam interibit, neque qui fecerit uoluntatem ipsius, sed manebit in aeternum quomodo et xps manet in aeternum C 60. ut nemo umquam dicat ..., sed arbitramini C 62. quam (legem dns) Hiberione optime benigne plantauerat atque instructa

erat fauente do E 5. sacerdotes ... quos elegit et indulsit illis ... potestatem E 6. migrare coepistis ubi nox non erit ... , sed exultabitis E 17. ecclesia plorat .. filios et filias suas quas adhuc gladius nondum interfecit, sed prolongati et exportati in longa terrarum ... uenundati sunt E 15. — 3. ut uidetur cum infinitiuo coniungi (cf FRANZ BLATT, Die lateinischen Bearbeitungen der Acta Andreae et Matthiae, 1930, p. 61, 3.100, 26.133, 10. et indicem p. 168): C 3.14.35. u coniunctiones B (ut 4). cf ut haberem unde nauigare (-em D) C 18 (sim Acta Andreae et Matthiae 43,12; al). — 4. participium uerbi finiti locum tenet: cecidit super me ueluti saxum ingens et nihil membrorum meorum praeualens (-ui Φ) C 20. sed alligatus spu ... et timeo perdere laborem C 43.

clausulae declaratiuae obliquae: 1. acc c inf: C 43. E 1.6. (C 34.55) — 2. infinitiuus: C 11.20.42.45. — 3. coniunctiones: quare C 44. quia C 4. 12.31.34.54.57.61. quod C 20(bis).43.46(bis).(52.)55.62(bis). E (1.)5. (10.)13.20. (post quod indicatiuus semper legitur praeter C 62 [253,15].) ut C 18.25.32.

clausulae interrogatiuae obliquae: 1. indicatiuus legitur post cur C 32. 49 (utroque loco idem fere ac quod). qualiter C 9.35.48 (coniunctiuus non inuenitur). quantum C 53. quare C 44 (idem fere ac quod). si C 27 (nescio si habebam). quae C 27. neglectis iis locis ubi aduerbia interrogatiua cur quare ad notionem coniunctionis quod accedunt (C 32.44. 49) aut ubi pronomina interrogatiua Patricio pro relatiuis uidentur fuisse (quae ... gesseram C 27, quantum ... erogauit C 53), indicatiuus quater tantum legitur. — 2. coniunctiuus legitur septies; semper post quis, quid (C 10.25.46. E 4.15); post qui (F 1); post si (C 13).

clausula relatiua cum notione generali: omnis qui, omnia quaecumque cum indicatiuo semper coniunguntur. pro futuro semper legitur futurum exactum: qui uoluerit C 45. quo modo uolueris C 18. quicquid mihi euenerit C 34. quicumque dignatus fuerit C 62. ubicumque loco fuero C 34. cf rideat .. qui uoluerit C 45. certum exemplum coniunctiui non exstat.

clausula relatiua cum notione consecutiua (in VULG raro legitur, cf W. E. PLATER, A Grammar of the Vulgate, p 127): ut ... ubique essent clerici qui baptizarent et exhortarent populum C 40. ubi numquam aliquis peruenerat qui baptizaret aut clericos ordinaret aut populum consummaret C 51. (locutus sum ut haberem unde nauigare[m] [D] cum illis C 18.)

clausula ab ut incipiens ante enuntiatum primum collocatur: neque ut sit occasio adulationis ... , scripserim uobis C 54. ut xpiani ita ut Romani sitis, ut decantetur uobiscum ... oportet D 3 a.

post adiectiua et impersonalia legitur modo infinitiuus, modo ut cum coniunctiuo; haec exempla dabimus: difficile est ut C 19. non

eram dignus neque talis ut C 15.55. non sum dignus ... subuenire E 16. (dignor *c inf* C 3.62. dignor ut C 58.) opera ... di reuelare ... honorificum est C 5. non licet adulari E 7. longum est *c inf.* C 35. E 9. oportet *c inf.* C 14.40 (*bis*). (ut decantetur ... oportet D 3 a.) potens est ut C 53 talis ut C 13. cf 15.55.

collocatio uerborum *seorsum tractabitur; hic pauca tantum notabimus:* ubi nemo se poterit subtrahere C 8. qualiter sum ego in sermonibus instructus C 9. occasionem inuenerunt me aduersus uerbum C 27. futurum reum me esse designat C 43. non ut causa malitiae C 46. causa uestra C 51. (*sed una causa C 42.*) — *u pronomina.*

uox ἀπὸ κοινοῦ **in priore membro posita:** spiritaliter apud patrem <et> inenarrabiliter genitum C 4. spiritus gestit et animus C 10. de seruitute saepe liberauit et de periculis duodecim *animam meam* C 35. multitudo copiosa et turba C 40. persecutionem patiuntur et impropria falsa C 42. a me alieni sunt et a xpo do meo E 5. pro quibus mortuus est et crucifixus E 7. cf neque ut sit occasio ... scripserim uobis neque ut honorem spero C 54, et C 35.41. E 12 (*u hyperbaton*).— *In posteriore membro:* ut esset uirgo xpi et ipsa do proximaret C 42.

hyperbaton (traiectio): annorum eram tunc fere sedecim C 1. uehementer debueram ... metuere C 8. qualiter sum ego in sermonibus instructus atque eruditus C 9. si ... datum mihi fuisset C 11. unde me uenit ignaro in spiritu C 20 (*u app crit*). bene mihi fuit C 28. totum per singula enarrare laborem meum uel per partes C 35. sicut falsa comparauerunt patres nostri idola C 38. filii Scottorum et filiae regulorum C 41. E 12 (cf WHITE 294). sexta ab hac die C 42. ut unus essem de suis minimis minister (-ris P) C 56. etsi ipsam etiam caream sepulturam aut miserissime cadauer per singula membra diuidatur C 59. inter barbaras itaque gentes E 1. militibus mittenda Corotici E 2. ut nobis aliquid indulgerent de praeda E 3.

reiectio coniunctionis: credentes et oboedientes ut sint filii Dei C 4. iste quare se mittit in periculo? C 46. piam misericordiam quod ago E 10.

chiasmus: ammiramini itaque magni et pusilli ... et uos dominicati rethorici audite et scrutamini C 13. utinam ut et uos imitemini maiora et potiora faciatis C 47. mihi ultronea munuscula donabant et super altare iactabant ex ornamentis suis C 49. praemia dabam regibus praeter quod dabam mercedem filiis ipsorum C 52. qui me aliquando ceperunt et deuastauerunt seruos et ancillas domus patris mei E 10. ibi uenundati ingenui homines, xpiani in seruitute redacti sunt E 15.

membra crescentia: rusticissimus et minimus omnium fidelium et con-
CL. & M.

temptibilissimus apud plurimos C 1. praeuidit nobis cibum et ignem et siccitatem C 22. adhuc impendo et superimpendam C 53. quasi filii di uiui et coheredes xpi et conformes futuri imaginis ipsius C 59. danda et tradenda, militibus mittenda Corotici E 2. an qui interfecti uel quos ceperunt uel quos grauiter zabulus inlaqueauit E 4. *alia*.

inconcinnitas, uariatio: nec non in secundis, sed etiam in pressuris C 34. ut non me impediret a profectione ... et de ... opera C 30. per Gallias atque Italiam, etiam in insolis D 1. secundum quod mihi ostensum fuerat et sicut sps suggerebat C 46. spero aut internicionem aut circumueniri aut redigi in seruitutem siue occasio cuiuslibet C 55. si aliquid pusillum egi uel demonstrauerim C 62. neque ut sit occasio adulationis ... neque ut honorem spero C 54. pro quo legationem fungor in ignobilitate mea, sed quia personam non accipit C 56. nescio quid magis lugeam: an qui interfecti uel quos ceperunt uel quos grauiter zabulus inlaqueauit E 4. *u etiam coniunctiones B s u et (1 b, g).*

asyndeton: una benedicta Scotta genetiuua nobilis pulcherrima adulta C 42. optime <et v> benigne plantauerat E 5. peccatum manifeste grauiter impudenter abundat E 15. scelus tam horrendum <et V> ineffabile E 17. creduli baptizati E 17. mendacibus <et V> periuris E 18. — *accedit anaphora, epiphora homoioteleuton:* per niuem per gelu per pluuiam C 16. donum tam magnum tam salubre C 36. (*sed hoc opus tam pium et tam mirificum C 34.*) insipientiae meae <et v> neglegentiae meae C 46. patricida fratricida E 5. — dns inquit (*om D. eras G*) in euangelio ammonet (-ens v) et docet dicens C 40. dns per prophetam praenuntiat (-ans v. Δ₂) inquit C 40. sicut ipse testatur inquit (-iens V) E 19. — uenit ad nos, insinuauit responsum acceperat C 42. uerba ista danda et tradenda, militibus mittenda Corotici E 2. longum est per singula discutere uel insinuare, per totam legem carpere testimonia de tali cupiditate E 9. ibi uenundati ingenui homines, xpiani in seruitute redacti sunt E 15. fidelis autem qui promisit: numquam mentitur C 54.

epexegesis: *u coniunctiones s u et (1 d); ut (1).*

pleonasmus: ut esset uirgo xpi et ipsa (sic V) do proximaret C 42. (*nisi potius figura ἀπὸ κοινῶν statuenda est.*) *u pronomen demonstratiuum.* — qui ... iura et sacras litteras utraque pari modo combiberunt C 9. omnia quaecumque C 40.52. — ut offeram illi sacrificium ut hostiam uiuentem animam meam xpo dno meo C 34. *u praepositiones (ad).* cur hoc meruimus audire tale responsum C 32. ut hoc dns seruulo suo concederet ..., in gentem illam tantam gratiam mihi donaret C 15.

illud scio certissime quia . . . C 12. quod obstiterunt peccata mea ut confirmarem quod ante perlegeram C 10. quod . . . ita hoc faciunt C 42. — et sic exclamauerunt . . . : Rogamus te, *etc.* C 23. nec sic praedixit: Male uidisti C 29. sic effitiatus est ut sit sps C 25. sic sunt omnes qui male agunt: mortem perennem poenam operantur E 13. — reprobatus sum a memoratis supradictis C 29. magis potius legatur E 21. meipsum impendar (-at PFC. -am G') C 53. uehementer pertimeo C 10. ante praefatus sum C 10. ante . . . iam olim praedixerat C 34. ante praeuidimus C 52. ante praenuntiauit E 11. sursum adleuauit C 12. plus augetur numerus C 42. — **pleonasmus particularum** (cf E. LÖFSTEDT *Vermischte Studien zur lat. Sprachkunde u. Syntax* [1936] 56–68): et de mea quoque opera C 30. et de loco non in uno quoque C 46. nec umquam fuit nec ante nec erit post haec C 4. nec non (*pro* et non) C 34. quas adhuc gladius nondum interfecit E 15. deinde postmodum C 17. et etiam C 42. nec etiam (*'noch auch'*) C 49. arripuit illud quod etiam omnes uirgines di ita hoc faciunt C 42. tamen conatus sum seruare me etiam C 49. etsi ipsam etiam caream sepulturam C 59. idcirco itaque C 40. et quidem scilicet C 12. (*haec duo exempla potius per ἐμφασιν explicanda sunt.*) si poposci uel pretium uel calciamenti mei C 50. sed uerumtamen C 18. cf 11. utinam ut et uos imitemini maiora C 47. *fortasse adiungendum*: Scottorum atque Pictorum apostatarumque E 2 (*u app crit.*); cf E 15. — (**abundat figura etymologica uel synonymica**): de captiuis baptizatis quos ceperunt E 3. cf 21. donum di quod largitus est nobis C 33. *sic accipiendum uidetur esse*: uerbum quod confessus fueram C 27.

formae eiusdem uocis uel uoces de eadem radice formatae iunguntur: praedixi et praedico C 47. fidem illis praestauī. (-stiti V) et praestabo C 48. impendo et superimpendam C 53. de duodecim periculis qua periclitata est anima mea C 35. sanguilentos sanguinare de sanguine E 2. iniquitas iniquorum E 16. omnes omnino C 8.

figura etymologica: uisiones uidebunt . . . somnia somniabunt C 40. *u pleonasmus.*

synonymorum compositio: cum timore et tremore C 8. sermo et loquela nostra C 9. post aerumnas et tantas moles C 15. in labe et in obprobrium C 26. proselito et peregrino C 26. cum fletu et lacrimis C 37. multitudo copiosa et turba C 40. usque ad terrores et minas C 42. cum tristitia et maerore E 16. peccator et impius E 18. — miser et infelix C 55. — exaltare et confiteri mirabilia eius C 3. cf 5.34. ad quam (gentem) caritas xpi transtulit et donauit me C 13. rideat . . . et insultet C 45. narrabant et dicebant C 46. ad roborandam et confirmandam fidem C 47. uerba . . . danda et tradenda E 2. plorat et plangit E 15.

figura synonymica u obiectum duplex, pleonasmus.

uoces non synonymae coniunguntur: scrutator corda et renes C 57. magni et pusilli C 13. sci et humiles corde E 7. — credentes et oboediētes C 4. quem confitemur et adoramus C 4. audite et scrutamini C 13. qui baptizarent et exhortarent populum indigentem et desiderantem C 40. credimus et adoramus solem uerum xpm C. 60 precor credentibus et timentibus dm C 62.

formulae iteratae: adquisiuit in ultimis terrae C 58. E 9. alligatus spu C 43. E 10. amor di et timor ipsius C 15.44. capturam dedi C 1.10.21. certissime reor C 59. E 1 (*iuxta ponitur clausula obiecti locum tenens*). cum tot milia C 1. E 14. Deo gratias C 19.23.42. E 17 (D 2). D 3 a. diligenter (incunctanter) et libentissime C 37.51. enumerare nequeo E 12. 16. et ibi scilicet C 17.23. et iterum *in capite enuntiati* 242,3.12. 243,8; (*loci biblici prioribus iunguntur:*) C 25.38.40. E 15; et iterum dicit C 40 (*bis*). inquit C 5.7. testatur C 11. ex fide C 15.19.22. filii Scottorum et filiae regulorum monachi et uirgines xpi C 41. E 12. genti exterarum E 10.14. hic et in aeternum C 12.26. E 21. (hic et in futurum C 31.) hoc est C 25.29. in nouissimis diebus C 34.40. E 11. inter haec C 20. 25.29. longum est per singula enarrare C 35. (discutere) E 9. nescio ds scit C 24.27. non eram dignus neque talis C 15.55. (non eram dignus C 32.) non mea gratia sed ds C 37. E 11. (non mea uerba sed di E 20.) paratus eram C 43.46.57. patriam et parentes C 36.43. E 1. Patricius peccator C 1. (+ indoctus scilicet) C 62. E 1. (indoctus scilicet *etiam* C 12.) per desertum iter fecimus C 19.22. per singula C 35. E 9. (per singula membra C 59.) pro quo legationem fungor C 56. E 5. pro utilitate aliorum C 37. E 10. (pro salute aliorum C 28.) quaeso plurimum E 7.21. quamdiu fuero in hoc corpore C 20. (+ mortis) 44. quanto magis C 11. E 9. quid dicam uel quid promittam C 57. (loquar) E 15. sed magis C 9.30.32. (+ potius) E 21. si dignus fuero C 13.37. (sum) E 1. sicut et ceteri C 9.11.44.57. supra modum C 55. E 15. tot milia hominum C 1.14.50. (baptizaui tot milia hom. C 14.50.) ubi nemo ultra est 34. (erat) 51. uidi in uisu noctis C 23.29. unde autem *formula transitionis nouies, u coniunctiones A.* (unde enim E 19. unde ergo C 10.34. E 7.) unde . . . postmodum C 32.36. usque ad mortem C 37. E 1. usque ad ultimum terrae C 1.11. (extremum) C 38. E 6. (in ultimis terrae C 58. E 9. ab extremis terrae C 38 *bis*.) ut uel sero C 2. E 21. (ut uel modo C 23.)

interrogatio rhetorica: *incipit a* quis, quid C 10(*bis*).13.19.34.57. E 8. 10.12.13.16. *incipit ab* ubi E 18.19. *ab* unde C 20.32.36 (*bis*). *a* nonne

E 16. a numquid E 10 (bis). anaphora pronominis uel aduerbii interrogatiui u anaphora.

litotes: non male C 26. uirtutem non paruam C 30. religionis non fictae C 44. in persecutionibus non paruus E 6. non inmerito (merito FC) E 18.

aposiopesis: et me quidem ... inspirauit si talis essem — dummodo autem — ut cum metu et reuerentia ... prodessem genti C 13. quod si ds inspirat illos ut .. resipiscant E 21.

allitteratio: pepercit proselito et peregrino propter nomen suum C 26. proselitus et profuga E 1. plorat et plangit E 15. ut patriam et parentes amitterem C 36. cf 43. E 1. in poenam miseri male deuenient C 60. — *allitteratio uel assonantia praefixi repetitione efficitur:* praesertim cum praesumptione C 10. praedixerat praenuntiatiuros C 34. ad inlecebras inlicitate perficiendas C 44. cf diuitiae et diliciae C 55.

homoioteleuton: diuitiae et diliciae C 55. speciosissimi atque amantissimi E 16. iudex uiuorum atque mortuorum C 4. filii Scottorum et filiae regulorum C 41. E 12. pro dilectione proximorum atque filiorum E 1. neque ciuibz scorum Romanorum, sed ciuibz daemoniorum ob mala opera ipsorum E 2. traditor xpianorum in manus Scottorum atque Pictorum E 12. — *uerborum formae in eadem suffixa desinentes saepe iunguntur; eas tantum exscripsimus, quibus cola aut commata terminantur:* quod ... numquam speraui neque cogitaui C 15. fides augebatur et spiritus agebatur C 16. mel siluestre inuenerunt et mihi partem obtulerunt C 19. donec ualde castigatus sum et in ueritate humiliatus sum C 27. Hiberione non sponte pergebam donec prope deficiebam C 28. ut populi multi per me in dm renascerentur et postmodum consummarentur et ut clerici ubique illis ordinarentur C 38. cf 51. nam etsi uetantur tamen fortiter imitantur C 42. quos aduocauit et prae-destinauit E 6. oues tuae laniantur atque depraedantur E 12.

repetitio: iterum iterumque C 61. magis ac magis C 16. doleo pro uobis, doleo, carissimi mihi E 17. non dico ciuibz meis neque ciuibz scorum Romanorum sed ciuibz daemoniorum E 2. coram omni natione quae est sub omni caelo C 3. dedit illi omnem potestatem super omne nomen C 4.

anaphora: tanta beneficia et tantam gratiam C 3. opus tam pium et tam mirificum C 34. donum tam magnum tam salubre C 36. tam dure et tam aspere aliquid ... effundere E 1. ubi nemo ultra erat et ubi numquam aliquis peruenerat C 51. unde mihi haec sapientia ...? unde mihi postmodum ...? C 36. quid adpetere uel quid uitare debueram C 10. quid dicam uel quid promittam dno meo? C 57. quid dicam uel

quid loquar E 15. qui mihi ostendit . . . et qui me audierit C 34. per niuem per gelu per pluuiam C 16. per singula . . . uel per partes C 35. post aerumnas et tantas moles, post captiuitatem, post annos multos C 15. antequam scirem eum et antequam saperem C 2. ne excitem illis . . . persecutionem et ne per me blasphemaretur nomen dni C 48. ut uel sero rememorarem delicta mea et ut conuerterem C 2. numquid sine do Hiberione ueni? . . . numquid a me piam misericordiam quod ago? E 10.

epiphora: insipientiae meae neglegentiae meae C 46.

